

Port. 259

Halliday

Ex bibliotheca
Steph. Quatremeri.

THE
PRESENT STATE

OF
PORTUGAL.

BY
JOHN HENRY COLEMAN

THE
PRESENT STATE
OF
PORTUGAL,
AND OF THE
PORTUGUESE ARMY.

PRESENT STATE

PORTUGAL

AND OF THE

PORTUGUESE ARMY

THE

PRESENT STATE

OF

ARMY OF THE PORTUGUESE

PORTUGAL

ARMY OF THE PORTUGUESE

FOR THE YEAR 1801

AND OF THE

PORTUGUESE ARMY

ANDREW BAKER

ANDREW BAKER

ANDREW BAKER

ANDREW BAKER

ANDREW BAKER

ANDREW BAKER

ANDREW BAKER

ANDREW BAKER

THE
PRESENT STATE
OF
PORTUGAL,
AND OF THE
PORTUGUESE ARMY:
WITH AN
EPITOME OF THE ANCIENT HISTORY OF
THAT KINGDOM,
A
SKETCH OF THE CAMPAIGNS
OF THE
MARQUIS OF WELLINGTON
FOR THE LAST FOUR YEARS :
AND
OBSERVATIONS ON THE MANNERS AND CUSTOMS OF THE
PEOPLE, AGRICULTURE, COMMERCE, ARTS,
SCIENCES, AND LITERATURE.

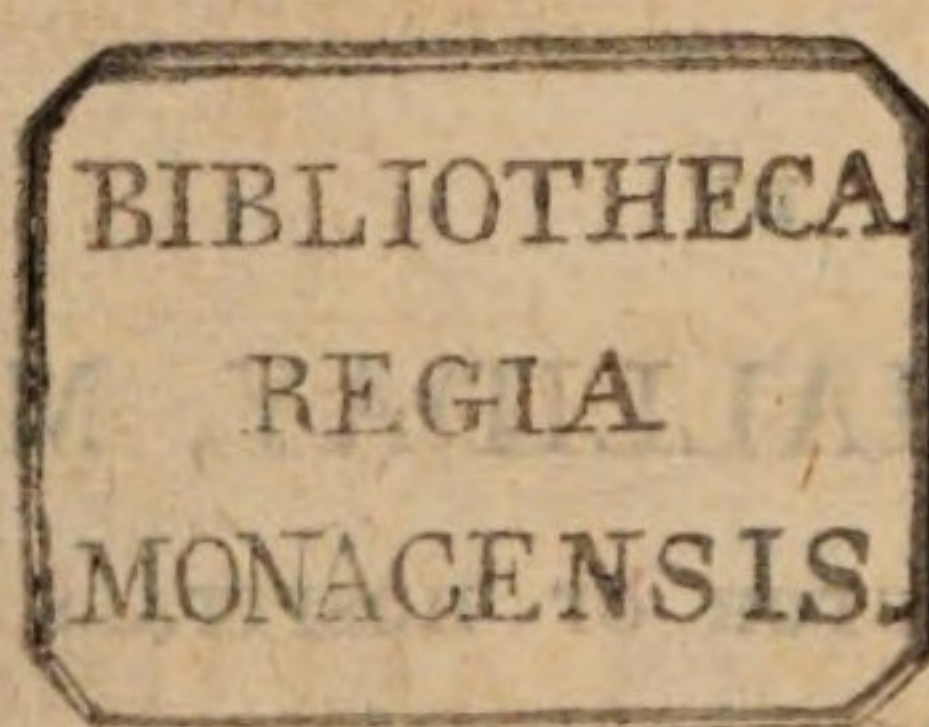
BY
ANDREW HALLIDAY, M. D.
LATE ASSISTANT INSPECTOR OF HOSPITALS WITH THE
PORTUGUESE FORCES.

EDINBURGH:

PRINTED FOR G. R. CLARKE, SOUTH ST ANDREW'S STREET; AND
LONGMAN, HERST, REES, ORME, & BROWN, LONDON.

1812.

THE
PRESENT STATE
OF
PORTUGAL
AND OF THE
PORTUGUESE ARMY:
WITH AN
EPITOME OF THE ANCIENT HISTORY OF
THAT KINGDOM,
A
SKETCH OF THE CAMPAIGNS
OF THE
MARGUIS OF WELINGTON
FOR THE LAST FOUR YEARS:
AND
OBSERVATIONS ON THE MANNERS AND CUSTOMS OF THE
PEOPLE, AGRICULTURE, COMMERCE, ARTS,
SCIENCES, AND LITERATURE.



J. Pillans & Sons, Printers,
Edinburgh.

TO
HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS,
JOHN,
PRINCE REGENT OF PORTUGAL,
AND OF
ALGARVE,
PRINCE OF BRAZIL,
&c. &c. &c. &c.

THIS VOLUME
IS MOST HUMBLY AND RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED,

BY
ANDREW HALLIDAY.

HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS

JOHN

PRINCE REGENT OF PORTUGAL

AND OF

ALGARVE

PRINCE OF BRAGANZA

THIS VOLUME

IS MOST HUMILY AND RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED

ANDREW HALLIDAY

As the appearance of the present Volume is in some measure owing to a former publication, I must trespass for a moment on the patience of the reader, while I give a short account of that Work, and of the circumstances under which it was published. This account is due to many of my friends, and necessary in some respects for my own justification.

When I joined the Portuguese army as a medical officer in 1809, I entered warmly into the feelings of the British officers, who were engaged in the arduous task of drilling and organizing that force, and took a particular pleasure in noting down, in my memorandum-book, such observations as occurred to me from time to time, with regard to the conduct of the different Brigades and Regiments, and their progress in discipline. These observations appeared interesting to many of my friends, and I resolved to publish them at some future period. In 1811 I was permitted to return to England for a very short time, and as I found that the state of the Portuguese army was very little known, and that the most extraordinary falsehoods with respect to it were appearing in the Newspapers day after day, I resolved to publish my observations, notwithstanding their imperfect state; 1st, Because I conceived that it was of some importance to this country to know the true state of the army of our most ancient and faithful Ally, particularly when so considerable a part of that army was paid by Great Britain; and, 2dly, I was anxious to counteract the intrigues of a few disappointed and envious individuals, whose business it was to mislead the public, for the purpose of depreciating as much as possible the merits

of Sir William Carr Beresford, and of the British officers who had assisted him in the organization of the Portuguese army. In both these respects my wishes were crowned with success ; but as I was much occupied during my stay in England, I had not time to correct either the style or sentiments. The book was hurried through the press in the course of ten days ; and, from the loose and general way in which many of my statements were expressed, they admitted of being interpreted in a manner altogether foreign to my feelings and intentions in publishing them. The Governors of Portugal felt indignant at some expressions which were meant to apply to times long past, but which admitted of being construed as inimical to the present established religion and government of the country. On explaining myself, however, to their Excellencies, they were pleased to say, that they were perfectly satisfied of the candour of my representations, and of the purity of my motives ; yet I felt regret at having given offence without intending it, and did not hesitate to declare so publicly.

I have embraced the first moments of leisure and reflection to add to my former observations, and to render them in some measure more worthy of the attention of the public. I wish the public, therefore, to consider the book now published as an unbiassed statement of what has actually come under my own observation ; and as the manuscript was never submitted to the judgement of any one, the opinions and sentiments which it contains are entirely my own. I have in my possession documents the most authentic, to prove every assertion which I have made.

I cannot sufficiently express my gratitude to his Excellency DON MIGUEL PEREIRA FORJAZ, for the assistance which he has afforded me in the compilation of this Volume. The splendid abilities of that Nobleman render

him equal to the first statesmen of the age ; and his zeal, intelligence, and activity in the dispatch of business, and profound knowledge of the constitution and interests of his country, have deservedly raised him to the first place in the councils of his Sovereign.

I have stated my sentiments on the past, as well as on the existing abuses in Portugal, with great freedom ; and I am convinced, that these sentiments will neither give offence to the Illustrious Personage to whom the Volume is inscribed, nor to His Royal Highness's representatives in Portugal. The present Government is too anxious to reform abuses, to take offence at their being pointed out ; and the nation is too enlightened to admit of their continuing hid from the Government much longer.—I can truly say, however, that in writing this book, “ I have nothing extenuated, nor have I set down aught in malice.”

To the literary reader I have to observe, that the sketch which I have given of the Ancient History of Portugal, has been compiled from the most authentic histories of the country, and from documents which I had an opportunity of consulting in the archives at Lisbon. In tracing the movements of the ancient Lusitanians, and of the Roman armies, I have uniformly given the present names of places, as I conceived the ancient names of rivers and places in that country, were of little importance to the general reader. I have not adopted either the Spanish or Portuguese spelling of the proper names and names of places, but have endeavoured to spell them according to the most general and approved English pronunciation. If I were writing in Spanish, I should spell these words as the Spaniards do ; but in writing English, I have thought it best to spell them as they are pronounced.

In the sketch which I have given of the Campaigns of the Marquis of Wellington, my only object has been, to

bring the principal events of each campaign, and the conduct of the Portuguese troops, before the reader. It is given as a document to prove the present state of the Portuguese army, not as a history of these campaigns. My remarks on the present state of Portugal are the result of my own observations in that country; I have attempted to describe what I have seen, and nothing more. The Tables which I have given will, I trust, be found interesting, as shewing our commercial intercourse with Portugal, and the great extent to which that country at present is dependant upon other nations, for the most necessary articles of subsistence.

To conclude, I have endeavoured to make the volume as amusing as possible to the general reader, while the correctness of my statements, and details, will admit of their being referred to by other writers.

Edinburgh, Nov. 7. 1812.

CONTENTS.

	<i>Pag.</i>
CHAP. I.— <i>Sketch of the History of Portugal, from the Earliest Period to the total Subjugation of that Country by the Romans in the time of Julius Cæsar,</i>	1
CHAP. II.— <i>History of Portugal, from the Invasion of the Goths in the Fourth Century to the Peace of 1762, in the Reign of Joseph I.</i>	30
CHAP. III.— <i>The History of the Army of Portugal, with a Continuation of the Principal Occurrences in that Kingdom from 1763 to the end of 1809,</i>	106
CHAP. IV.— <i>The Present State of the Portuguese Army, including a Return of the General and Field Officers, and of the British Officers serving with that Army,</i>	167
CHAP. V.— <i>The Laws, Punishments, and Military Establishments in Portugal,</i>	226

CHAP. VI.— <i>The State of the Civil Establishments of the Portuguese Army, comprehending the Quarter-master-general's, Commissariat, and Medical Departments,</i>	248
CHAP. VII.— <i>A General View of the State of the Kingdom, including the State of Agriculture, Population, Commerce, Fisheries, Manufactures, Literature, Literary Societies, &c.</i>	274
CHAP. VIII.— <i>A Sketch of the Campaigns of the Marquis of Wellington for 1810, 1811, and 1812,</i>	334

APPENDIX.

<i>Notes to Chapter I.</i>	425
<i>II.</i>	426
<i>VII.</i>	434
<i>General Staff of the Portuguese Army, and of the Commander-in-chief, and General Officers commanding Provinces, with their respective Staff Officers,</i>	436
<i>Errata,</i>	440

OBSERVATIONS
ON THE
PRESENT STATE OF PORTUGAL,
&c. &c. &c.

CHAPTER I.

A Sketch of the History of Portugal, from the Earliest Period, to the total Subjugation of that Country by the Romans, in the time of Julius Cæsar.

IN the year of the world 1792, say the early chronologists, Tubal the son of Japhet, and grandson of Noah, landed in the Peninsula. He founded his first city on a small neck of land, opposite the present town of St Ubes¹; and the descendants of his followers spread over the whole of what is now called Spain and Portugal. Tubal, according to the same authors, lived and reigned for 163 years; and his offspring continued to direct the wanderings of the people for upwards of four centuries.

Anno Mundi,
cir. 1792.

A. M.
cir. 2202.

After the destruction of the last of this race by Gerion, a captain of banditti, and a native of Africa, in the year of the world 2202, Osiris, the son of Jupiter, and king of Egypt, reduced the colonies in the Peninsula to his subjection. The improvements in agriculture introduced by Osiris, and the mild laws which he formed for the government of the wandering natives, rendered him not only an object of their highest esteem as a ruler, but of their strictest worship as a god.

From the time of Osiris to the conquest of this country by the Carthaginians, a period of twelve hundred years, we find not less than twenty-five kings mentioned as holding the supreme sway. Among these Hercules Libius,—Hispanus, from whom Spain took its name,—Lusus, from whom some derive Lusitania,—and Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, are the most remarkable. As this chronology, however, is supported by no written authority, it is to be considered rather as a traditional than as a true history. Many of the present cities derive their origin from those traditional kings. Thus it is said that Gerona was founded by Gerion, already mentioned;—Seville, anciently Hispala, by a king named Hispalus;—Tagus, one of the descendants of Tubal, gave his name to the river;—Hercules founded Coim-

bra; and Ulysses, during his wanderings after the destruction of Troy, married Calypso, daughter of Gregorius, king of Lusitania, and laid the foundation of the present Lisbon. It is even asserted that Homer visited the Peninsula in the suite of Ulysses; and it is disputed, whether the beautiful banks of the Mondego, or the fertile plains in Algarve, and in Andalusia, are the true Elysian fields; for so delighted was the poet with the beautiful scenery in those countries, that his picture could only be drawn from the impression which they had made upon his mind.

A. M.
cir. 2883.

But these fables are too ridiculous to occupy a place in grave history, although they have attracted the attention of many authors, and form the chief part of some voluminous histories of Portugal. Indeed, such is the anxiety of mankind in every country, and in every situation, to trace their origin to the highest source, that whenever true history has failed, fable has most conveniently stepped in and filled up the dreary blank. Long previous to the conquest of Spain by the Carthaginians, the Phœnicians had been in the habit of frequenting its harbours, and had established colonies on various parts of the coast². The object of the Phœnicians being traffic rather than conquest, they were but little acquainted with

M. A.
0318

A. M.
cir. 3453.

the interior of the country. The Carthaginians, allured by the same riches which had so long occupied the attention of the Phœnicians, did not rest satisfied with the wealth which was brought to them. We shall find, that as friends they first assisted, and then expelled the Phœnicians; and having made the country their own, they were able to prevent any foreign nation from interfering in their commerce. The original inhabitants became obliged, not only to fight the battles of the republic, but also to dig in the bowels of the earth, for those riches which added so much to the wealth and splendour of the rival of Rome.

A. M.
3460.

It is from this period that the fables give place to true history, and that we are able to trace with certainty, not only the then existing state of Lusitania, but also the succeeding fortune of the Lusitanian people. When the Carthaginians became masters of the Peninsula, we find that it was divided into three great districts, viz. Tarraconensis, Bœtica, and Lusitania. I shall confine my remarks for the future to this last district, which forms the present kingdom of Portugal, and endeavour to trace, in this and the succeeding chapter, the various revolutions which have taken place in that country during the immense

period of more than two thousand years. It must be obvious, that the leading features of the history of Portugal for so lengthened a period, can only be glanced at ; indeed, were I to attempt more, I should extend my observations to volumes instead of chapters.

A. M.
cir. 3400.



When Lusitania first became known to the Carthaginians, it was peopled by a number of different tribes, forming so many republics, each governed by its own laws and customs, but subject, notwithstanding, to the general government. The name of King was unknown among them. When they went to war, one of their number was chosen to command the whole : his power was absolute while the war continued ; but as soon as the campaign was finished, he returned again to the rank of a simple citizen, and ceased to have any authority in the state. Antiquarians have been at great pains to procure and preserve the names of those different tribes ; and perhaps the reader may be amused with a brief account of such as have been particularly mentioned. I must observe, however, that notwithstanding the account which has been given of the first inhabitants of Lusitania, it is evident that the different tribes who possessed the interior of the country at the time of its becoming subject to Carthage, were for the most part of Celtic origin.

A. M.
cir. 3460.

1st, The Ostidiani and Cynesii, two small tribes of whom little is known, occupied the angle of land which forms the promontory of Cape St Vincent. 2^d, The Turditani, by far the most numerous, as well as the most polished tribe, occupied the greater part of what is now called the kingdom of Algarve. They are represented as a well-informed, polite, and industrious people,—acquainted with the laws and customs of Egypt, and following the chronology, as well as mythology, of that country. 3^d, The Turduli, divided into ancient and modern, are represented as being the most ancient, and as such, the most respected inhabitants of Lusitania. The ancient Turduli occupied the whole of the present province of Portuguese Estramadura, while the moderns of the same tribe were fixed on the south side of the Tagus, on the banks of the Sôr river. 4th, The Celtæ, who still retained the name which they brought with them from Gaul, occupied that part of the Alentejo which comprehends the cities of Elvas, Estramoz, Villa Viçosa, Evora, &c. 5th, The mountains on the south side of the Tagus were possessed by two tribes called Barbarii and Sarecenii; and the 6th, Colarni, occupied the country between the Tagus and the river Sôr. The 7th, Pesuri, lived on the Estrella mountains; and the banks of the Coa were peo-

pled by a tribe called Transcudani. A colony of Greek extraction is said to have possessed the country between the Douro and Minho.

A. M.
cir. 3500.

These are amongst the most remarkable of the tribes that have been enumerated, and who continued to retain their distinct appellations as late as the reign of the emperor Trajan. The religion of those tribes was evidently derived from the Egyptians and Greeks. They paid divine honour to Mars, Minerva, and Hercules.— They were accustomed to offer in sacrifice to their gods the right hands of those they took captive in war; and on great occasions they offered both men and horses. The men were chiefly employed in war, the women in commerce, and the slaves in agriculture.

The Turditani carried on a cruel war against the colonies of the Phœnicians. The Carthaginians were solicited by the Phœnicians, to assist them in recovering their conquered colonies. Maherbal was appointed captain of the forces of Carthage, and about 510 years before Christ, he landed in Spain. The numerous troops of the Turditani were finally obliged to give way before the superior discipline of the Carthaginians, though the African troops were more than once put to the rout during the continuance of the war. Intrigue, joined to force, soon reduced the

A. M.
cir. 3500.

tribes in Lusitania, and the Phoenicians had the mortification to find themselves driven from that country, by the very people whom they invited to assist them in securing it. Safo, another Carthaginian general, completed, by his kindness and attention to the natives, the conquest which Ma-herbal his predecessor had begun. And from this period to the subjugation of Carthage, we find the flower of the Carthaginian army composed of Lusitanian youths. Their valour, steadiness, and discipline, are often mentioned by the historians of Rome. And on more occasions than one, the Lusitanian legions under Veriatus, are mentioned as having obtained the victory for the Carthaginians *. The great Hannibal was born in Lisbon. When Carthage was reduced to sue for peace, the Spanish colonies were ceded to the Romans; yet, from the Carthaginians they had learnt the use of arms, and the many victories which they had obtained over the Roman legions while commanded by foreign leaders, made them sensible of their own strength. They therefore did not submit quietly to the yoke.

The Romans divided Spain into two governments, the Ulterior and Citerior, which were given to Prætors. Lusitania formed the greater part of the

* Vide Titus Livius, Silius Italicus, &c.

Hispania Ulterior of the Romans. The kind treatment of Cornelius Scipio, Claudius Nero, and Marcus Porcius Cato, the first Prætors who commanded in Hispania Ulterior, in a great measure reconciled the Lusitanians to their fate; but the cruelties of Scipio Nasica excited a very general rebellion against the Roman power. The Celtiberians having joined the Lusitanians in this struggle for liberty, the forces of Scipio were completely routed in a general action; and had the Lusitanians known how to follow up their victory, they might have recovered the whole of Spain from the Romans; but they spent that time in unseasonable idleness and joy, which they ought to have otherwise employed, and thus gave Scipio an opportunity of collecting his scattered and vanquished troops. As soon as Scipio found himself in a situation to offer battle to the Lusitanians, he made a vow to dedicate, if victorious, the whole of the spoils to Jupiter Capitolinus. The Auguries were declared favourable, and the legions, being led on to the combat, once more overcame the Lusitanians.

After this victory the Lusitanians continued quiet for some time; but Lucius Emilius Paulus attempting, during his Prætorship in Hispania Ulterior, to reduce the Batestani, a tribe which had hitherto denied the power of Rome, the Lusi-

A. M.
cir. 3807.

A. M.
cir. 2811.

tanians seized the opportunity to throw off the yoke. While the Batestani and Lusi continued together, they were uniformly victorious; but having separated their forces, the Roman Prætor was able once more to reduce them to subjection. During this campaign the Lusitanians lost upwards of 20,000 of their best troops, and the whole of their baggage. Yet they did not, it would appear, continue in peace for any length of time, as we find them again in arms under the government of Caius Catinius, who being wounded during the siege of Orta, in which the Lusitanians had taken refuge, died shortly after during the Consulate of Septimius Posthumus Albinus and Q. Marcus Philippus. L. Calpurnius Piso was sent to take the command after the death of Latinius. The whole of the Roman forces in Citerior, as well as Ulterior Spain, were united under the two Prætors*, to reduce the Celtiberians and Lusitanians, who had also united their forces, and were encamped between the mountains of the Sierra Morena, and the Guadiana river. An engagement took place near the city of Toledo, in which the Romans lost the flower of their army, and were obliged to retire with precipitation. But, instead of following up the victory, the Lusitanians con-

* Crispinus, and Calpurnius Piso.

sumed several days in dancing and games in the Roman camp, and then retired to their houses laden with the spoils of 5,000 Romans, who had perished on the field of battle. The Celtiberians also retired quietly to their country, to enjoy the riches which they had taken from the Romans and their allies. In the mean time, the Roman Prætors, in the greatest consternation, had retired to their respective capitals, where their utmost endeavours were employed in keeping in subjection the people, (who had already begun to revolt in many places), and in collecting what forces they could to take the field against the rebels, who were enjoying their late victory in the greatest security.

A. M.
cir. 3818.

The Romans were soon in a state to try the fate of a general battle, and the Lusitanians, unconscious of their danger, were not slow to give them an opportunity. After a long and bloody engagement, the Romans proved victorious, and it is asserted, that the loss of the Lusitanians exceeded 35,000 men. The Roman Prætors were also victorious in some lesser engagements, and on their arrival at Rome, they were allowed the honour of a triumph. After so many severe losses, the Lusitanians were obliged to submit quietly to the yoke for some years. But as soon as they were able, they again had recourse to their arms.

A. M.
cir. 3847.

— Their love of liberty was unconquerable, and their hatred to the Roman name, was equal to that entertained by the Carthaginians themselves. From neglecting regularity and discipline, they were often almost annihilated by the Romans ; at least, so one would suppose, when we read of 30 or 40 thousand men slain in a single battle ; yet, we find them constantly rising superior to every misfortune.

About this time, the inhabitants of Braga, a Carthaginian colony, having raised one of their citizens, called Appimanus, to be their leader, he soon proved himself worthy of being chosen the general of the whole Lusitanian forces. The exertions of Appimanus, his diligence and abilities, soon brought their army to such a state of discipline, as rendered it formidable to the Roman governor. To check this revolt, which seemed to threaten their very existence, the Romans lost no time in collecting their forces, and marching towards Lusitania. They conceived it impossible for troops raised in so short a time, and composed of so many different tribes, to have acquired any kind of discipline or organization, and that it was improbable they would venture to face the veteran troops of Rome ; and therefore, their preparations were not so complete as they ought to have been ; but this idea cost them dear, for

Appimanus, indefatigable in his duty, and prudent in his plans, carefully avoided coming to any general engagement, until he had completed the discipline of his army, and not till, by allowing them to enter into slight skirmishes, in which they proved victorious, he taught them to despise the Roman prowess. When Appimanus considered his arrangements complete, he chose a favourable opportunity, and offering battle to the Romans, it was eagerly accepted, and long and obstinately contested; but the troops of Appimanus proved victorious, and the Romans were obliged to abandon their camp, and betake themselves to flight. The riches which were found in the abandoned camp were immense; yet Appimanus had the virtue and the power to induce his army to set fire to the whole, and to consider the glory of delivering their country, superior to the riches of a Roman camp.

The victory of Appimanus gave serious alarm to the republic of Rome. Marcus Manlius was removed from the command, which was given to Calpurnius Piso, but he was equally unfortunate with his predecessor. In a general action with Appimanus, he lost not less than six thousand of the best of his troops; and had not the Lusitanian chief been cut off in the midst of his victorious career, it is probable that the whole of

A. M.
cir. 3847.

A. M.
cir. 3849.

Spain would have been recovered from the Romans at that period. With Appimanus, the hopes of the Lusitanians became extinct. Rome had now dispatched a powerful army for Spain under one of the Consuls ; but while their force was engaged in reducing the rebellious tribes in Citerior Spain, the Lusitanians had time to recover a little from the hopeless state which they were placed under by the death of Appimanus. Cessaron, who had long been the friend and companion of Appimanus, was made their general. His first care was to secure what had been already conquered. For this purpose he withdrew the troops from Bœtica, and retired towards Lusitania. The Roman army, being made acquainted with the retreat of Cessaron, hastened to come up with him, which they did on the banks of the Guadiana near Badajoz. Cessaron halted one wing of his army, and offered battle to the Romans, while the other wing with the baggage crossed the river. This engagement was well fought on both sides, but the Lusitanians, inferior in number to the Romans, were obliged at last to give way. Lucius Mummius, who commanded the Roman army, anxious to finish the war at once, by the total destruction of the army of Cessaron, divided his troops into small parties, that they might pursue the flying enemy with greater facility. Cessaron soon per-

ceived the error which the Roman Prætor had committed, and collecting the unbroken part of his army, he cut off the whole of the detachments in detail, and thus reduced the victory of Mummius to a complete defeat. Mummius, in the utmost despair, retired to an eminence with what remained of his troops, and there being so strongly fortified, Cessaron was obliged to sit down before the place with his whole army. Secure, and elated with their late victory, and despising the small number of their enemies who were shut up in the fort, the Lusitanians began to relax in their discipline, and to wander over the country pillaging. This Mummius soon learnt from his spies, and he formed the daring resolution of attacking, in the night, the whole of their army, with the few Romans that remained with him. In this he succeeded to the utmost of his wishes. The slaughter in the Lusitanian camp was immense, and Cessaron himself was slain in endeavouring to rally his confused and terrified troops.

Cantherus was chosen the successor of Cessaron; but it would appear that his good fortune was not equal to that of his predecessor, as Marcus Atilius, the successor of Mummius, reduced the whole province to subjection, and even obliged Cantherus to fly to Africa. Cantherus returned with a small army from Africa, during

A. M.
cir. 3850.

A. M.
cir. 3851.

the prætorship of L. Licinus Lucullus *, but was completely overpowered, and obliged to take refuge on a desert rock ; when, being in danger of perishing for want of food, he formed the resolution of delivering himself up to the Roman legions, who were placed to prevent his escape. He descended boldly from the rock at noon-day, and with an intrepid air marched towards Lucullus's camp. The admiring Romans opened on every side to allow him to pass, and actually permitted him to escape from the chains which had been so long prepared for him.

GALBA, by his cruelty and avarice while Prætor in Ulterior Spain, roused the dormant spirits of the Lusitanians, and the Roman army was actually driven from their country. But having been recruited, they soon returned to the confines of Lusitania, with a determination to destroy both the country and the people. In this consternation, and without an army capable of opposing the now victorious Romans, the Lusitanians had recourse to negotiation. Galba, finding it impossible to subdue them by force, gladly accepted their offers. The Lusitanians were invited to send their principal chiefs with their families to the camp of the Roman general, to treat for a just and lasting

* In Hispania Citerior.

peace. But no sooner were they within his power, than he ordered the whole to be disarmed and basely murdered³. The Roman senate felt their honour committed by this base act. Galba was immediately recalled, and commanded to give an account of his conduct. Cato appeared in the Senate against him, and endeavoured to draw down the vengeance of his country upon the man who had so disgraced the name of Roman: But the influence of Galba proved more powerful than the eloquence of Cato, and he escaped the punishment so justly due to his perfidy.

A. M.
cir. 3851.



This treachery on the part of Galba served to bring into action the abilities of a hero, who never was surpassed in any age, or in any country.

VIRIATUS, a noble Lusitanian, was one of the few who escaped the massacre of Galba. He retired from the bloody field to the bosom of his country, and two days after this horrid transaction, he collected together his countrymen from every part. He led them to the field of murder, and pointed out to them the mangled bodies of their brethren and kinsmen, now the prey of the ravens and the wolves. Innocence and childhood had been no security against the perfidy of Galba. The mother and her offspring had fallen together, and the foxes were feasting on the bodies of the murdered virgins, yet lovely in death.

A. M.
cir. 3852.

“Here,” said Viriatus, “you behold the glorious actions of those mighty heroes, the conquerors of the world. Our children, our wives, our daughters murdered,—our beloved companions in arms no more,—and can we look calmly on and suffer this? No, it is impossible; we must be revenged. We will avenge ourselves as well as the many nations laid waste by those barbarians, who have gained a name more from the cowardice of their enemies, and their vile factions, than by any valour or virtue which they possess. Justice and the gods are for us, let us therefore swear eternal hatred to the Roman name, and let us raise up all the nations of the earth against these destroyers of the human race.” Washing his hands in the blood of one of his murdered children, Viriatus, after this short harangue, solemnly invoked the infernal deities, and swore never to lay aside his arms until he had avenged her death. His companions repeated the oath, and immediately began to collect an army from every part of the country.

As the troops were collected together, they were divided into separate corps, and regularly drilled and exercised; and taught to execute with promptitude whatever orders they received. When Viriatus thought their discipline complete, he led them out against the enemy, and laid waste

the country, wherever the Romans held the dominion. On the advance of winter, he retired into Lusitania, and having sacrificed a Roman knight to the god of war, he made his whole army pass the victim in single files, and, by dipping their right hands in the blood upon the altar, swear once more eternal war against the Romans.

A. M.
cir. 3853.

As soon as the season would permit, Viriatus led his troops into Boetica, where he reduced to his subjection all the cities then under the command of the Romans. His successes having reached the Senate of Rome, Caius Vetilius was dispatched with a powerful army to reduce this revolt of the Lusitanians.

VETILIUS, by forced marches, came upon Viriatus before he was aware of his approach. The Lusitanians were dispersed, and Viriatus, with such as he could keep together, retired to a fortified town in Boetica. This town was instantly besieged by Vetilius, and the Lusitanian general was reduced to the last extremity. His soldiers began to suffer want, and, despairing of success, they entered into a conspiracy to deliver up the place to Vetilius upon certain conditions, which were accepted by the Prætor.

This conspiracy having come to the knowledge of Viriatus, he collected the whole of the

A. M.
cir. 3853.

troops together. “What is it I have heard?” said he; “are the Lusitanians then so tired of liberty, that slavery is become pleasant to them? Do you think, however, that you will be safe in your captivity? No; you have only to open your eyes, and look to the fate of your murdered fathers. Can you believe that Vetilius, with all his appearance of equity and moderation, will treat you better than Galba did your fathers and brothers? It is impossible, my beloved companions. You deceive yourselves, he too is a Roman. In him the same spirit and intentions are at work for your destruction; and it matters not whether he accomplishes his purpose by deceit or force. Vetilius appeared to abominate the perfidy of Galba; but take care that this appearance of detestation is not assumed for the purpose of leading you more easily into his snare. Disgraceful snare, which, while it does the highest honour to your unsuspecting minds, adds doubly to the already accumulated infamy of your enemies! Indeed, my beloved companions in arms, they wish to deceive you. You who are invincible with arms in your hands, they would overcome with fine speeches.

“Am I, then, who have sacrificed my repose, and who have a thousand times risked my life for yours, to be thus abandoned? To see the fruits of all my diligence, of all my anxieties

and cares, destroyed in a moment? Is your generous confidence to be the cause of your ruin? Am I to stand and see you delivered into the hands of a barbarous army? No. May the gods of my country, who have so often saved it from oppression, prevent those disasters which now hang over you. And may they inspire you with that noble ardour, that invincible valour, which have so often proved fatal to tyranny. My beloved companions, you are able to dictate laws to those you now wish to obey. If hitherto we have been able to put a stop to their tyranny, let us continue to do so. Call to mind your former greatness, and leave the rest to me."

A. M.
cir. 3853.

Inspired by this discourse, and still more by the noble and intrepid manner in which it was delivered, the soldiers only wished to forget that ever they had given occasion for it. Viriatus next day drew out his whole army in front of the Roman camp, and Vetilius, supposing he intended to give battle, lost no time in preparing to receive him. But Viriatus had no intention of fighting. His troops were drawn out to carry into effect a stratagem which he had well digested, and which happily succeeded. His cavalry were formed in a close line in front of the enemy, so as to cover the ground between their position

A. M.
cir. 3853.

and the town; and while the Roman general was in expectation of their coming on to the charge, the Lusitanian infantry were filing off by an unguarded path, and retiring to a place of safety. When the infantry were known to be out of danger, the cavalry were ordered to retire again within the walls of the town. The Romans pursued them to the gates, which Viriatus found little difficulty in defending until it became dark. He then quitted the city, and joined his infantry.

Next day, when the Roman Prætor found that the army which he had long considered in his power was no where to be found, he broke up his encampment, and pursued the rout of Viriatus, with the view of forcing him to a general action; but this the Lusitanian carefully avoided for some time. At last, when Viriatus found that his troops were considerably increased in number, and that the eagerness of Vetilius to engage, had made him neglect the necessary precautions, he offered battle; and it is reported, that in this engagement the Prætor, and the greater part of the Roman army, were cut off. A Lusitanian soldier took Vetilius prisoner, but, ignorant of his rank, and considering him only as a fat old man, he cut off his head, that he might not have the trouble of guarding him.

VIRIATUS commanded the Lusitanian forces for

fourteen years, and during the whole of that period, his country was in a great measure freed from the Roman power. Caius Plaucius Hypsæus, Claudius Unimanus, and C. Negedius Fegulus, were severally obliged to acknowledge the valour of the Lusitanian chief; and at last it was found necessary, to send a consular army into Further Spain.

A. M.
cir. 3858.

Quinctius Fabius Emilianus the Consul was sent to reduce Viriatus, with an army of fifty thousand Romans. Fabius was too proud to consider him as any thing more than a captain of banditti, whom the very name of a Roman Consul would subdue. The Roman army was halted on the banks of the river Agueda; and while the Consul proceeded on a religious mission to Cadiz, his lieutenant, with 20,000 men, was sent on to reduce Viriatus, who was encamped with his army near the present city of Viseu. Viriatus learnt from his spies the movements of the Roman Consul, and, leaving a small part of his force strongly entrenched, and secure against any sudden attack, he crossed the Mondego at the Ponte de Murcella; and, marching on the south side of the Estrella mountains, he got into the rear of the troops that were awaiting the return of Fabius, and quite unprepared for an attack; and very few escaped the general slaughter.

A. M.
cir. 3858.

After the defeat of the main body of the Consul's army, he pursued the detachment under the lieutenant, and came up with them while engaged in besieging his fortified camp at Viseu. They also were taken unawares, and completely routed.

The Consul Quinctius Fabius Servilianus, who succeeded Emilianus, was not more fortunate; for, while engaged in besieging Erisane, a town in the province of Beira, he was completely defeated by Viriatus, and obliged to take refuge in a place full of rocks and precipices, out of which it was impossible for him to escape. But the brave Lusitanian, whose only object during good or bad fortune, was the welfare of his country, took advantage of this distress of Servilianus, to obtain for her a peace upon favourable terms.

By a treaty which was concluded at this period, Viriatus was declared the friend and ally of the Roman people, and the Lusitanians were permitted to retain the lands they then actually possessed. This treaty was ratified by the Senate; yet Q. Servilius Cæpio, who succeeded his brother, was highly dissatisfied with it; and therefore, on his arrival in Spain, soon found means to break it. Cæpio was scarcely arrived in Boetica, when he ordered the Roman army to enter Lusitania, and to lay the country waste; and although Viriatus

was able to put a stop to the career of Cæpio, A. M.
cir. 3864.
the ruined and deserted state of his country made him more anxious for a lasting peace than a victorious warfare. He deputed two of his most confidential friends to wait upon Cæpio with terms of peace; but instead of attending to their mission, we find that they were base enough to exchange the life of their leader and friend for a few talents of Roman gold. They returned from the Roman camp, and were invited to sup with Viriatus. They left him at a late hour, and as soon as they supposed he was asleep, they returned and basely murdered him. It is recorded to the honour of the Senate of Rome, that they unanimously condemned this base act. And when his murderers applied for the reward of their crime, they were told, that “Rome admired their general too much to pay the assassins who had imbrued their hands in his blood. The Consul, Scipio Nascia, commanded them to quit the city under pain of death. The army which he had led so often to victory, was truly in despair when his death was made known. His funeral was attended by the whole of the troops, and every Roman prisoner in the camp was sacrificed to his manes. Cæpio triumphed over poor Lusitania, but it was a triumph of treason, not of valour.

A. M.
cir. 3864.

The army, without a leader, was obliged to submit; and a town, supposed to be the present Valentia, was built for their accommodation. For many years we find little but partial rebellions; no one was found able to succeed Viriatus, or to concentrate the forces of the country.

When the civil wars of Marius and Sylla had weakened the Roman power in the provinces, the Lusitanians, always on the alert, ventured to erect the standard of liberty. Sertorius, during his command in Spain, had gained the affections of the natives; and when it was known that he was banished from Rome, he was chosen the leader of the Lusitanian forces.

3930.

SERTORIUS arrived from Africa with 2600 troops which he called Romans, and 700 Africans; he was joined by 4000 Lusitanian infantry, and 700 cavalry, and with this force he was able to keep the field against Citta, whom he vanquished in a sea fight, and Tidius the governor of Boetica. He cut to pieces the whole Roman army under Thorianus, which Metellus had detached against him, and even obliged the Consul himself to return from Lusitania with disgrace.

SERTORIUS was not only a great general, but also a great lawgiver. He lessened the taxes which the Lusitanians had been accustomed to pay. He formed the country into a republic after the

manner of Rome, and constituted a senate of the principal nobility; the magistracy and other officers were regulated as in Italy. He instituted an academy for the instruction of youth, whom he provided with the best masters. He obliged the nobles to send their sons to this academy, that they might acquire that knowledge which was requisite and becoming their rank in life, and necessary to render them useful in the state.

A. M.
cir. 3940.

POMPEY, in the height of his popularity, was sent as the assistant of Metellus against Sertorius; but he too was baffled in his plans, and obliged to acknowledge the power of this leader. But Sertorius, like Viriatus, fell a sacrifice to treachery. Perpenna, his lieutenant, who had long envied his virtues, organized a conspiracy against him; and inviting him to a party of pleasure at Evora, where the conspirators were assembled, on a signal being given, after supper, he was dispatched with many wounds.

SERTORIUS, who was a true Roman, had the art to conciliate the affections of all men; and, while struggling to reduce the power of the dictator Sylla, he seemed to aim at nothing more than the liberty of Lusitania. Even at this moment his memory is cherished in Portugal, and his virtues and glorious deeds are to be traced in the songs and legends of the country people.

A. M.
cir. 3940.

PERPENNA succeeded Sertorius in the command of the army, and soon fell into the snares which Pompey had laid for him. His troops were routed and dispersed, and he was himself taken and put to death by order of Pompey. The Lusitanians, once more without a leader, were obliged to submit to the Roman authority; and from this period, we find but little to record with regard to that country. Many of its principal towns were destroyed by an earthquake about 70 years before the coming of Christ; and Julius Cæsar, who was Prætor, reduced some rebellious tribes, which appear to have been the last efforts of the Lusitanian people.

The nation now began to esteem it an honour to be considered a part of the Roman people. Various honours were conferred upon the principal cities, and the Lusitanians received these honours with respect and gratitude. The Emperor Augustus made a tour through this country, which was become an integral part of the empire, and his kind and conciliatory conduct tended not a little to rivet their chains. Beja was styled "Pax Julia;" Evora, "Liberalitas Julia." Mertola got the name of Julia Myrtilis. Santarem, then called Scalabis, was denominated the "Julium Presidium;" and Lisbon, where he met with an unusual degree of

attention, was honoured with the appellation of ^{A. M.}
“ Felicitas Julia.” Some of those cities were ^{cir. 3960.}
honoured with the *Jus Coloniae*, while others ob-
tained the *Privilegium Municipii*. Statues and
temples were dedicated to that great monarch in
every quarter of the land; and from this period
we find the history of Lusitania altogether con-
nected with the history of Rome; and as such, it
is foreign to my plan to pursue it ⁴.

C H A P. II.

*History of Portugal, from the invasion of the Goths
in the fourth century, to the peace of 1762.*

Ann. Dom.
cir. 248.

DURING the dark ages which succeeded the fall of the Roman empire, we know but little of what took place with regard to Lusitania. The Franks overrun the whole of the Peninsula in the reign of the Emperor Decius; but it was not till the total subversion of the empire, that the Gothic tribes became masters of that country, although they appear to have held authority in Spain for some time previous to that great event.

A. D. 411. Ataulfus, general of the Visgoths in Spain, married Galla Placida, the sister of the emperor Honorius, and is considered as the founder of the Spanish monarchy.

The Suævi and Alani are said to have held Lusitania as a separate kingdom for 177 years, but were finally subjugated and united with the kingdom of Spain, by Leovigildus, King of the

Goths, and the sixteenth in succession from A-
taulfus.

A. D.
cir. 714.



The Goths continued masters of the whole of the Peninsula, until the cruelty of the king, Don Rodric, the perfidy of Count Julian, and the desertion of Archbishop Opas, brought it under the dominion of the Moors.

About four years after the conquest of Spain by the Moors, we find Pelagio, a Gothic Prince, and cousin of Rodric, collecting the scattered remnants of the Christians in the mountains of Asturia, and in a short time able to make war upon the forces of Tarif. Pelagio, however, was never able to extend his conquests beyond the Asturias, but his son-in-law, who succeeded him, and who is known as Affonso the First, was able to establish his throne in Leon, and to obtain possession of many towns in Lusitania.

In proportion as the different provinces of Spain were recovered from the Moors, they appear for the most part to have been erected into kingdoms by the Christian princes who conquered them. Thus we find Don Ferdinand styled the Great, and Emperor, because, from being King of Castile, he succeeded, in right of his mother, to the kingdom of Leon, and in right of his wife, to that of Navarre. Affonso, the sixth of that name, and twenty-sixth in succession from Affonso styled

A. D.
cir. 1069.

the first of the Catholic kings, was the son of Ferdinand the Great. He governed the kingdoms of Leon and Castile, and the provinces of Galicia and Portugal ; and for thirty-seven years carried on a most destructive war against the Moors. The fame of his father, and a desire of being engaged against the enemies of the true faith, drew many Christian nobles to the court of Spain. Among these we find the Count Henry, who, for the future, must claim our sole attention.

HENRY was the fourth son of Henry, the son of Robert first Duke of Burgundy, and brother of Henry the First, King of France. He came to Spain probably with the troops which were sent by Philip, King of France, to the assistance of Affonso ; and it would appear that he soon became a favourite with the Emperor. In 1093, Henry married Theresa, the daughter of Affonso ; and in 1094, on the birth of a son, the Emperor was pleased to bestow upon his son-in-law the castle of Cale, near the mouth of the river Douro, together with its port, and the cities which had been rescued from the Moors on the north side of that river. At this period Henry took the title of Count of Porto-Cale, the name of the place where he resided, and was allowed by Affonso to consider as his own whatever pos-

sessions he might recover from the Moors, between the rivers Douro and Guadiana.

A. D.
cir. 1100.



Count HENRY, it would appear, was not idle; he lived eighteen years as an independent prince, and is reported to have gained not less than seventeen signal victories over the Moors. Count Henry, the first of a race of distinguished sovereigns, was able to impose a new name upon the country which he governed; yet, under the dominion of his descendants, we shall find that the heroes of "Portugal" are not less distinguished than those of ancient "Lusitania."

AFFONSO HENRY succeeded his father as Infant of Portugal at the age of eighteen, and the first years of his reign appear to have been embittered with domestic broils. For some time his contests with the Moors were confined to the provinces of Beria and Estremadura; and it often happened, that cities were no sooner taken than they were again re-taken. It appears, however, that his growing power had become alarming to the Moors, and that every effort was made by the followers of Mahomet to reduce it. Ismael, King or governor of Alentejo, the greater part of which was in the possession of the Moors, collected together an immense army to oppose the progress of Affonso. The troops of the Infant of Portugal were few in number, but they were tried warriors, and accustom-

A. D.
cir. 1144.

ed to conquer. They met the army of Ismael on the Campo d'Ourique, and though opposed to more than ten times their own number, they were completely victorious. Ismael and most of his followers were cut off, and the standards of five of the principal leaders of the Mahometans fell into the hands of the Christian army. The army proclaimed Affonso king on the field of battle, and three days afterwards he returned to Coimbra, where he married Matilda, second daughter of Amadius, Count of Savoy.

Santarem being in the possession of the Moors, they were able to make frequent inroads into the country which had been conquered by Affonso, and to lay it waste; it therefore became an object of some moment to possess that city, strong both by nature and art. Affonso took it by escalade, and found an immense booty, which he distributed to his army¹.

Lisbon was still in the possession of the Moors, and Affonso could only regret his inability to take it. He had indeed gained many battles, and taken many cities; nay, he had been proclaimed King of Portugal by his victorious and faithful followers; the Estates of the kingdom, assembled at Lamego, had ratified the act of that army, and the Pope, Alexander III. had confirmed their choice; but, while his enemies remained possess-

ed of the first cities in his kingdom, the title was of little consequence. It is said, that, wandering one day on the mountains of Cintra, and regretting his want of power to become master of the fair city within his view, he espied a large fleet of ships making for the land. Affonso sent one of his confidential officers to learn who they were, and whither they were bound, and, to his great joy, was informed that they were an army of 14,000 Englishmen, French, and Germans, bound for the Holy Land, under William, Duke of Normandy. The King of Portugal immediately made large offers to the leaders of these troops, to induce them to assist him in the reduction of Lisbon. His offers were accepted, and after a siege of five months, the city was taken on the 21st or 25th of October 1147. With Lisbon many other cities fell, and the whole of what is now called Portuguese Estremadura became subject to Affonso.

A. D.
civ. 1147.



During the assembly of the States at Lamego, Affonso made known the laws by which he conceived the kingdom ought to be governed, and these laws, having been approved of by the nation, continue to the present moment unaltered². After he had established his kingdom upon a sure basis, and after a long series of victories, he departed this life at Coimbra, on the 6th of Decem-

A. D.
cir. 1185.

ber 1185, in the seventy-sixth year of his age, and fifty-eighth of his reign.

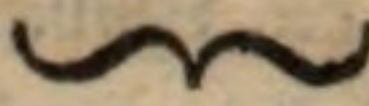
SANCHUS, the only surviving son of Affonso and his Queen Matilda, succeeded to the throne three days after his father's death. He had been educated in the camp from his earliest infancy, and therefore was well qualified to govern a warlike people. His most remarkable conquests were the cities of Elvas in the Alentejo, and Sylves in Algarve. And his assiduity in propagating the blessings of peace was so great, as to entitle him to the appellation of "Father of his country." During this reign, however, the nation suffered severely, not only from the frequent incursions of the Moors, but also from disease and want, in consequence of a long continued drought, and of various civil wars which took place among his subjects.

After a reign of twenty-six years, Sanchus died at Coimbra in 1212, aged fifty-seven. He left a numerous family by his queen, Dulcia of Arragon, and was succeeded by his eldest son, Don Affonso.

The King of Castile, Affonso IX. having broken the truce which he had concluded with the Moors some time previous, the Pope granted a crusade, and the Christian princes of all nations flocked to his standard. The Moors were equally on the

alert; and troops from Africa, and every part of the Peninsula, were collected to chastise the infidelity of the Christians. These two great armies met on the 16th of July 1212, near the Sierra Morena, where the famous battle of Las Navas was fought. The King of Portugal was not in this battle, but his troops supported with great bravery the credit of their nation.

A. D.
cir. 1212.



AFFONSO besieged, and, with the assistance of a fleet of Dutchmen, took Alcacer de Sal; but the violence with which he persecuted his brother and sister, in violation of his solemn oath to his father, was the cause not only of a war with the kings of Leon and Castile, but also of many civil broils, and the destruction of some of the finest provinces of the kingdom. The noble conduct of Martin Sanchus, natural brother of the King of Portugal, who had entered that kingdom at the head of a large army from Leon, put an end to this cruel war. The superstition of the times in which Don Affonso lived, had raised the ministers of religion to be of great consequence in the state, and their insolence had kept pace with their consequence. The church was embraced as a means of enjoying temporal benefits, and the licentiousness of the clerical order exceeded all bounds. The prior of the order of St Domingo was so daring as to publish various laws, by which it was

A. D.
cir. 1230.

declared death for the person who failed to pay him the proper respect. The king, with great firmness, chastised the sons of the church; and although the kingdom was interdicted by Honorius III., he continued firm to his purpose, until he had brought the clergy to a just sense of their duty. Affonso reformed many abuses which had begun to affect the just administration of the laws, and curtailed many of the enormous powers possessed by different cities. The Moorish governors of Badajoz, Cordova, and Seville, were overcome by this prince, who, after twelve years of a most successful reign, was in a manner cut off by his immense corpulency, in the thirty-eighth year of his age.

SANCHUS, the second of that name, and fourth King of Portugal, succeeded to the throne of his father in the twenty-first year of his age. He appears to have been of too delicate a constitution, and too much given to favour the dissolute clergy, to suit the temper of his warlike nobles. Weak minds are generally the cause of their own ruin. Don Sanchus, having no fixed opinions of his own, was entirely guided by those of his flatterers or favourites. The kingdom was divided into parties, and discord and civil war began to prevail. Yet, amidst all these discontents, we find the arms of Portugal universally triumphant,

and a Don Payo Pires Correa, worthy of leading them to honour and glory. The queen, Donna Mercia Lopes de Faro, having been considered the author of many of the king's unpopular acts, naturally became the odium of the people, and the inhabitants of the country between the Douro and Minho, headed by Raimondo Viegas, governor of the castle of Orem, marching in a body to Coimbra, took her prisoner, and sent her to Castile, where she died, without ever being able to see the king. Some violent proceedings against the church soon rendered the king as unpopular with the clergy as with the nobles; and a representation having been made to the Pope, he was declared by his Holiness unworthy to reign, and the kingdom was given to his brother Affonso, who was the third of that name, and fifth king of Portugal.

A. D.
cir. 1230.

SANCHUS was too weak-minded to support his own rights. He appears to have submitted quietly to the excommunication of the Pope, and to have retired to Castile. Don Affonso, during the lifetime of his brother, was styled the Regent of Portugal, but on his death, which happened about three years after he had quitted the kingdom, he was proclaimed king.

The steady loyalty and valour of Ferdinand

A. D.
cir. 1230.

Pacheco, and Martin de Freitas, the one chief magistrate of Celorica, and the other of Coimbra, deserves to be particularly mentioned in this place. Pacheco defended his city against all the forces of the Regent, and De Freitas refused to deliver the keys entrusted to him to any but the king from whom he received them. During the siege of Coimbra, the Alcaide was informed of the death of the King by the Regent; but this he refused to credit, unless permitted to proceed to Castile to ascertain the fact with his own eyes. The Regent accordingly permitted him to go; and it is recorded of this hero, that, putting the keys of the city into the hands of the deceased King, his master, he thus addressed him, “Sir, while I believed you were alive, I exposed myself to every danger, suffered every misery of hunger and thirst; I ate leather and drank urine, that I might support your interests, and prove to you my loyalty. Now that you are dead, I here deliver to your Majesty the keys of that city which were entrusted to me. I can now relate to the brave citizens of Coimbra that your Majesty is no more, and that they may indeed acknowledge Don Affonso for their king, without failing in that allegiance which they owed to you.”

The first care of Don Affonso, on coming to the throne, was, to chastise those who in any measure

had taken advantage of the weakness of his brother to aggrandize themselves ; and which he did with so much regard to justice, as gained him the universal love of his subjects. Under the command of Don Payo Pires Correa, so distinguished in the reign of Sanchus, the troops of Portugal completed the conquest of Algarve, so often taken and retaken by the Moors. The kingdom enjoyed peace from 1252 to 1260. Affonso assembled the States-general at Leiria, and every exertion was made to improve the kingdom, and lessen the pride and insolence of the church. The thunder of Rome had but little effect upon the actions of this King, although the intrigues of the clergy appear to have embittered his latter moments. Affonso died in Lisbon in the 69th year of his age, and 34th of his reign, and was succeeded by his son Dennis on the 16th of February 1279.

A. D.
cir. 1279.

The great attention which Dennis paid to agriculture, and the internal interests of the kingdom, obtained for him the appellation of *The Farmer*, and “ Father of his people.” He listened to the complaints of the clergy, and had them canvassed in the assembly of the nation ; and by authorities named on both sides, and the good offices of Pope Nicholas IV., every thing was accom-

A. D.
cir. 1280.

modated, and the interdict of Gregory X. was removed from the kingdom.

The perfidy of Sanchus, King of Castile, and the obstinacy of his successor Ferdinand, obliged the King of Portugal to make war upon that country. The Spanish fleet surprised and took some Portuguese ships in the Tagus; but being pursued by the Portuguese admiral, the greater part of the Spaniards were either taken or destroyed. A harassing and bloody warfare was kept up for some years between the Kings of Portugal and Castile, much to the satisfaction of the Moorish governor of Grenada, whose only hope was in seeing the Christians destroying each other. Ferdinand of Castile was at last obliged to sue for peace, which was granted him; and, in confirmation of this treaty, Ferdinand married Constancia, the daughter of Dennis. And Affonso, the son of Dennis, married Brites, the sister of Ferdinand.

The greater part of this reign was spent in peace, and the arts and sciences began to be cultivated with some effect; Dennis himself wrote some poems in Latin. He improved considerably the language of his country; he was the patron of learning and learned men, and the founder of the university of Coimbra. During his reign, the order of Knights Templars was extinguished in Europe; but Dennis gave the pro-

perty of those knights to a new order which he constituted in Portugal, called the Military Order of Christ, which continues to be the most distinguished order in the kingdom. The rebellion of his son was the cause of much grief to this good King, who died on the 7th of January 1325, in the 63d year of his age, and 46th of his reign. A. D.
cir. 1320.

AFFONSO, the fourth of that name, succeeded his father; for a while he seemed to think more of the pleasures of the chace than of the great nation he was called to govern; but, being aroused from this lethargy by the daring boldness of one of his nobles, he soon shewed that he was worthy of the sceptre which had been left him³. The frugal economy of the late King had left the nation in a most flourishing state, and the royal treasury well supplied with money, so that Don Affonso found himself both an independent and a powerful Prince. He is the author of some excellent laws; and though we are obliged, taking his character as a whole, to consider him as an ungrateful son, an unjust brother, and a cruel father, he was undoubtedly a great warrior, a wise politician, and a good King. The famous battle of Salada, at which the Kings of Portugal and Castile commanded against Haliboacen, Emperor of Morocco, and Abenhamet, King of Grenada, was fought about the year 1340. And

A. D.
cir. 1350.

though this great victory, still celebrated in Spain on the 28th of October, as the *Victoria Christianorum*, was in some measure owing to the valour of Affonso and his brave Portuguese, and though numerous spoils were found in the camp of the infidels, the only things coveted by the King of Portugal were, the royal standard and trumpet of Haliboacen.

PETER the I. surnamed the Cruel, succeeded his father, who died in 1357. But his reign of nine years, spent in avenging the murder of his Queen Innes de Castro, and in correcting the abuses which had crept into the state, offers nothing worthy the attention of a soldier. The strictness, however, with which he executed justice, and the attention which he paid to the complaints of his oppressed or injured vassals, gives him, in my opinion, a fairer claim to the title of Just, than Cruel.

FERDINAND, the son of Peter, succeeded to the throne in the 22d year of his age. Having been persuaded to lay claim to the throne of Castile, then occupied by Henry the bastard, he was soon engaged in a cruel warfare, which had nearly proved the ruin of the whole kingdom. Ferdinand appears to have been a weak-minded, inconstant Prince. His prodigality soon dissipated the wealth left him by his father, and his careless

inattention soon allowed the arms of the King of Castile to get a decided advantage over him. A. D.
cir. 1380.
The weak indecision of Ferdinand rendered him a very unequal match for the firm, active, and vigilant Henry; and although the Portuguese were uniformly victorious in skirmishes and partial actions, the Spaniards were for the most part victorious in all general engagements. Ferdinand, fully occupied with his pleasures, left the management of the kingdom to his ministers and favourites; and, as it seldom happens that a weak King has good advisers, the nation became a prey to civil discord, as well as foreign warfare.

JOHN, Duke of Lancaster, the son of our Henry III. having married Constance, eldest daughter of Peter the Cruel, King of Castile, whom Henry had deposed and murdered, considered the kingdoms of Castile and Leon as belonging to him in right of his wife. He therefore sent ambassadors to the court of Ferdinand, to solicit his aid in removing the bastard from his usurped throne, and a treaty, offensive and defensive, was concluded between the Duke and the King of Portugal. It was agreed that they should take the field with an equal number of troops, and that whatever was conquered by the Portuguese should remain subject to Ferdinand, except the cities and fortified castles of Castile. Henry used every

A. D.
cir. 1380.

means in his power to dissuade Ferdinand from this alliance with England, but without effect. He therefore entered Portugal with a well appointed and numerous army. Henry's object appears to have been, to get possession of Lisbon, so that, master of his capital, he might be able to force the weak Ferdinand to consent to his wishes. The brave citizens of Lisbon foiled the well laid plans of Henry; for neither the arms nor the gold of Castile could induce them to betray the rights of their Sovereign. The citizens suffered a most harassing siege for several months, while the King remained quietly at Santarem enjoying his pleasures, without making a single effort to relieve them; at last, through the mediation of Cardinal Guido, sent on purpose by Pope Gregory XI., a peace was effected between the two Kings, and Lisbon was released from this cruel but memorable seige.

By this treaty the Kings of Portugal and Castile agreed to join the King of France in the war against England; and Ferdinand was bound to refuse all manner of supplies to the English army already in Portugal, under the Duke of Lancaster. This peace was not of long duration; for at the same moment that Ferdinand was apparently cementing the bonds of peace and friendship with John, the successor of Henry of Castile, he was entering into a

secret treaty with the Duke of Lancaster and Earl of Cambridge in England, to assist them in their attempt to dethrone that monarch. In consequence of this treaty, the Earl of Cambridge arrived in Portugal with the English army; but the irregularities and cruelties committed by that army, which had never before been in any but an enemy's country, soon rendered all union with the Portuguese impracticable.

A. D.
cir. 1380.

The reign of Ferdinand was most inglorious for Portugal. The luxury of his court, and the infidelity of his Queen, might have passed unnoticed in a more degenerate age. But in those days they were looked upon as very uncommon. The fleets of Spain carried the horrors of war into the very heart of Lisbon; and for a time, it almost seemed that the effeminacy of the court had changed the very feelings as well as morals of the people.

FERDINAND left no male heir. The Queen, Leonora, was left Regent of the kingdom, which it was intended should pass to the son of his daughter Donna Brites, who had married John, King of Castile. The Portuguese, afraid of coming under the dominion of a King of Spain, obliged John, Grand Master of the order of Aviz, and natural son of Peter I. to ask for the regency of the kingdom, until a son of Donna

A. D.
cir. 1383.

Brites was of age to ascend the throne. This the King of Castile refused; and attempting to have himself proclaimed King of Portugal in right of his wife, the people were roused to a sense of their danger, and naturally cast their eyes upon the Grand Master, who was the idol of the nation. Having sacrificed the Count of Orem to the fury of the mob, Don John was proclaimed Regent and guardian of the kingdom in December 1383.

The Regent was soon able to make head against the forces of Castile, who had entered the kingdom with the view of asserting their master's right to the throne, and his mother-in-law's to the regency; and though a powerful portion of the nobles were inimical to his views, yet the whole body of the people shewed themselves ready to support him in whatever he might attempt. The Queen Leonora was obliged to retire to Alenquer, and from thence to Santarem, where she was met by the King of Castile and his army, which had proclaimed him King of Portugal. Many cities, in the first instance, submitted to the authority of the King, and the Spanish army came a second time to sit down before the walls of Lisbon.

The Regent was indefatigable in his exertions. Ambassadors were sent to England, and returned with assistance both in money and troops. The Portuguese under the immediate command of Nuno

Alves Pereira, who had got into the rear of the army, were victorious in every engagement with the Spaniards, among whom the plague began to commit such ravages, that the King was soon obliged to raise the siege, and retire upon Castile; not, however, without threatening to return and take ample vengeance. Nuno Alves Pereira, who had raised 200 lancers, and 1000 infantry, at his own expence, carried on an active warfare in the Alentejo, obliging the refractory nobles and citizens to acknowledge the authority of the Regent.

A. D.
cir. 1385.

The Portuguese fleet, under Ruy Pereira, brother to Nuno, gained a complete victory over the Castilians in the Tagus. And as soon as the kingdom was evacuated by the Spanish army, the Regent assembled the general Cortes in Coimbra, where he was almost unanimously invited to accept of the crown, as the only means of saving the country from ruin. On the 6th of April 1385, John was proclaimed king and defender of Portugal. His first act was to appoint his faithful friend, Nuno Alves Pereira, constable of the kingdom, and master of his household. The other offices of the state were bestowed with equal justice and discrimination, and the most active measures were adopted to repel a second invasion, which was threatened by the King of Castile.

A. D. 1385.

The speech of the constable to the people of Portugal, so elegantly paraphrased by Camoens, ought to be in the hand of every soldier of that nation at this moment. It is worthy the great man who spoke it; and the manner in which his views were seconded, reflects the highest honour on the nation to whom it was addressed ⁴.

The King of Castile, as was expected, left Cordova at the head of a numerous army, and invaded Portugal by the Alentejo. The first city laid siege to was Elvas, where, having taken a poor peasant, he ordered his hands and ears to be cut off, and sent him into the city, which had refused to surrender, with a paper on his breast, declaring that such would be the fate of the inhabitants, if they did not open their gates immediately. The governor, Don Gil Fernandes, to shew the great King how little he valued his threats, ordered two Spanish prisoners to be treated in the same inhuman manner, and sent out to the army with a paper, to say that thus he would treat every prisoner in his power, if a single peasant was molested for the future.

Finding Elvas too strong, and too well defended, to be easily reduced, the King of Castile passed on with his army, determined, as he declared, to take revenge on Lisbon, which had twice foiled his attempts. But he had not now a weak King, or a dejected people, to contend with. Roused

to a sense of their danger, and headed by a prince ^{A. D. 1385.} whom they loved, and in whose valour they could confide, the Portuguese no longer considered the threats and numbers of the enemy. The King of Portugal quitted Guimeraens, where he had been with the constable, and, collecting together the whole of his forces from Oporto, Coimbra, and other places, he followed the route of the invading army; and, on the 14th of August, he overtook them near the plain of Aljubarrota.

The immense superiority of the Spaniards in point of numbers appeared to damp the spirits of the Portuguese for a short time; but the valour of the constable, and the confidence which they had in the King, rendered them equal to any enterprise, and an immediate attack was decided upon. The Castilians, secure in their numbers, and despising the handful of troops opposed to them, perhaps did not adopt such measures to secure the victory, as they might have done.

The Portuguese army, which, according to the best accounts, did not exceed 6500, (the Spaniards say 10,000 infantry, and 2000 cavalry), was most advantageously posted in a plain, with a deep impassable ravine on each flank. It was divided into two bodies; the command of the right wing was given to Mem Rodrigues, that of the left to Raymundo de Vasconcelles. The con-

A. D. 385.  stable led the vanguard of the left wing, which was composed of about 200 Englishmen, and 600 lancers, chiefly sons of noblemen. The King led on the right wing in person, accompanied with 700 lancers, which formed his guard. A considerable space was left between the two wings, or bodies of the army, and the cavalry were stationed on the flanks of each corps.

The army was thus formed with its front towards Leiria; but a movement of the enemy obliged John to front towards Aljubarrota, which gave a considerable advantage to the Spaniards, as the dazzling of the sun in the faces of the Portuguese prevented them from distinguishing accurately the movements of their opponents.

The King of Portugal, at the instigation of the Duke of Lancaster, had declared in favour of Urban VI. who had been elected Pope in opposition to Clement VII. supported by the Spaniards; so that, in addition to the cause of the country, religion was also brought into action; and, previous to the commencement of the engagement, the Archbishop of Braga, clothed in white, ran from rank to rank, absolving and encouraging the troops.

The action commenced, on the part of the Spaniards, with a discharge from two pieces of artillery, the first ever used in the Peninsula;

which killed two brothers, and seemed to excite ^{A.D. 1385.} a considerable alarm among the Portuguese. But a soldier, either from design or accident, calling out immediately, "The victory is ours,—Heaven has cut off the only two traitors in our ranks, who were guilty of the greatest crimes; let us to the charge!" the army rushed on to close combat. The contest was long and bloody on both sides, and the constable, overpowered by numbers, was obliged at one time to retire upon the reserve. Having rallied his troops, and being supported by the whole of the left wing, he again led them to the charge, at the same time that the King and the right wing made a desperate effort to break the Spanish line. This combined attack was successful. The Spaniards were thrown into confusion, which being perceived by the King of Portugal, he immediately left his post at the head of the right wing, and advanced in front of the centre of his army, calling with a loud voice, "Soldiers, follow your King, and he will shew you the road to victory."

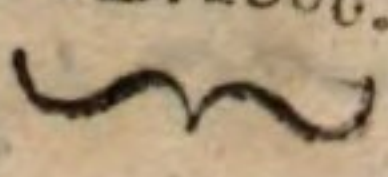
The Spaniards were rallied by the presence of their King, who, unable to ride on horseback, was carried in the rear in a litter, and the victory for a long time remained doubtful. But the superior valour of the Portuguese overcame the numbers opposed to them; and the mortality be-

A. D. 1385. ing great amongst the Spanish officers, the ranks got into confusion, and the rout became general.

The King with some difficulty escaped being taken prisoner, but the royal standard of Castile, and the sceptre of the kingdom, fell into the hands of the victorious army.

If we consider the small number of John's troops, the irregular manner in which they were armed, many having only long poles, and take into account the well-armed host, with artillery, opposed to them, this victory has seldom been equalled in any age or country. The Spaniards are said to have lost 10,000 or 12,000 men in this engagement, a greater number than the whole of the Portuguese army. The King of Castile fled from the field of battle, passed through Santarem, and, embarking in the Tagus, proceeded to Seville, and from thence to Carmona, where he lived in the greatest misery, being unable to bear up against so severe a defeat. John remained on the field for three days, and afterwards retired with his prisoners to Santarem, where he rewarded, with great care, those followers who had gained him so signal a victory.

Embassadors were sent to communicate this victory to the King of England, and to invite the Duke of Lancaster to take advantage of so favourable a circumstance to recover the kingdom of

Castile for his daughter, now the legitimate heir ^{A. D. 1386.}
to the crown. 

JOHN of Gaunt, though sixty years of age, was easily persuaded to embark in this hazardous enterprise; and, leaving England with a powerful fleet and army, and accompanied by his wife and two daughters, the Ladies Phillippa and Constance, he arrived at Corunna on the 26th of July. Some say that he took possession of this city, others that he did not, but that, being obliged to raise the siege, he proceeded to Oporto, where he met the King of Portugal.

The Kings of Castile and Navarre, alarmed at this junction of the two powerful armies of England and Portugal, had recourse to Charles VI. of France, from whom they received a reinforcement of 2000 cavalry, commanded by Louis of Bourbon, the uncle of Charles. A treaty was concluded between the King of Portugal and the Duke of Lancaster; and while the armies were preparing to take the field, the King and the Lady Phillippa were married at Oporto. When the King took the field, the Queen retired to Coimbra, where, having a council assigned her, she was entrusted with the management of the internal affairs of the nation.

The Portuguese army which joined the Duke of Lancaster, consisted of 3000 lancers, 2100

A.D. 1387. archers, and 5000 infantry, under the command of the King in person. The allied armies entered the kingdom of Leon, where several cities were reduced; but the want of provisions, and a great mortality in the English army, occasioned by the heat of the climate, obliged the two leaders to retire upon Portugal. The troops were quartered in the province of Beira,—the King proceeded to Lisbon, and the Duke to Coimbra, to see his family. The Duke, however, returned immediately to the army at Trancoso, where he had nearly been assassinated by a hireling of the King of Spain.

The King of Portugal, being in bad health, was confined in Lisbon; the Spaniards therefore sent to Lancaster to offer terms of peace, and as these terms were considered more advantageous than a doubtful contest, they were accepted of. The Infant Henry, the heir of the King of Castile, married the Lady Constance, the legitimate heir to the crown of her grandfather, Pedro the Cruel; and the Duke of Lancaster received a pension for life of L. 40,000, and 600,000 florins, as a compensation for the expences of the war.

The Duke of Lancaster quitted the Peninsula immediately after the signing of this treaty; but as the King of Portugal was not included in it, the war was continued on his part for some time.

longer, and with such success, that the King of ^{A.D. 1390.} Castile was reduced to sue for peace, and compelled to sign a truce, which lasted for three years.

At the conclusion of this truce, a peace was effected between the two nations, and John I. found himself firmly seated on the throne of Portugal. But the infidelity of the Spaniards obliged the King to have recourse to arms, almost as soon as the treaty of peace was signed. He took possession of Badajoz and Albuquerque, and refused to deliver them up until the conditions of the treaty were fulfilled by Henry II. who had succeeded to the crown.

This treaty, however, as well as several others of the same nature, can be considered only a suspension of arms; as the hatred which existed between the two nations, and which has in some measure been carried down to the present times, soon induced new wars, and a disregard to all treaties.

After a fruitless struggle of some years, the Spaniards, worsted in every campaign, were obliged seriously to sue for a peace. It was adjusted by the respective plenipotentiaries, and ratified by John, and John II. who had succeeded to the throne of Castile. For eight or ten years the kingdom enjoyed an uninterrupted repose, which,

A. D. 1400. though favourable to the increasing power and wealth of the nation, did not suit the warlike temper of the Prince or his brave nobles. Besides, the Princes Edward, Peter, and Henry, were now capable of bearing arms, and anxious to distinguish themselves.

In a private family-discussion, at which the Princes John and Ferdinand, and the Count de Barcelas assisted, it was agreed, that an attempt should be made upon Ceuta, a rich and populous city belonging to the Moors on the coast of Africa, and the refuge of all the Moorish pirates. John's first care was, to procure a fleet capable of transporting his army ; for this purpose, every exertion was made to equip as many ships as possible in Portugal, while many were freighted in England and Germany, and in different ports of Spain. New levies of men were raised in every province. The nation entered into the arrangements of the King with great alacrity ; and though every person was able to assign some reason for so formidable an expedition, yet the intentions of the King were never suspected.

The fame of the King of Portugal, and his warlike preparations, brought many strangers to Lisbon to offer their services in the expedition. In a short time the sea was covered with ships of every kind and description, and no-

thing but the cry of war was heard throughout ^{A. D. 1415.} the land. In the beginning of August, this fleet, amounting to 230 sail, left the Tagus. The Prince Don Peter commanded the ships, and the Count of Barcellas the gallies. The King was accompanied by the constable, and almost the whole of the nobility of Portugal. Amongst the strangers mentioned as accompanying the expedition, is an Englishman who had equipped four ships of war at his own expence.

The fleet touched first at Lagos, and afterwards at Faro, where the King was pleased to make known his intentions for the first time. When the fleet approached Gibraltar, the inhabitants sent a deputation to wait upon the King, with various presents, and to sue for peace. On the 14th of August, the whole came to anchor before Ceuta; and on the 15th, the King visited every ship in the fleet, exhorting his soldiers to conduct themselves as they were wont, and to support the glory of the nation.

The Moors made every exertion to impede the landing of the Christians, but without effect. The Portuguese not only drove them from the shore, where they were drawn up to prevent their landing, but pursuing closely, they entered the city at the same time with the flying Moors. After a dreadful contest in the streets of Ceuta, the go-

A.D. 1415. verner was obliged to retire with his troops to the citadel, and allow the Princes, Edward and Henry, to remain masters of the city. The King landing with the remainder of the army, the whole was soon reduced; when, after returning thanks to God in the principal mosque, the three Princes, Edward, Henry, and Peter, together with such of the nobles as had most distinguished themselves, were knighted, according to the custom of that age.

The plunder was immense; but for some time the King seemed doubtful whether he ought to erase the city, or leave a garrison to defend it. It was at last decided, that a garrison should be left in Ceuta, and the government was offered to Martin Affonso de Mello; but Mello having declined this honour, it was asked for and obtained by Don Pedro de Menezes, Count of Isla in Spain, and who, for his distinguished services in the defence of this first foreign conquest, was made Marquis of Villa Real in Portugal.

JOHN left Ceuta on the 2d of September, and returned to Portugal; where, having allowed his troops to return to their houses, and rewarded with a liberal hand the foreign levies who had assisted him, he was received in a most flattering manner by his admiring subjects. The Prince Don Peter was created Duke of Braganza, and

was the founder of that illustrious house; and ^{A. D. 1433,}
Don Henry was created Duke of Viseu.

It would lead me into a detail incompatible with the limits which I have assigned to the present sketch, was I to pursue the narrative of the almost more than human exertions with which the garrison of Ceuta, and their brave governor, defended it against the powerful armies of the Moors; nor can I do more than recommend to the military reader to study this period of the Portuguese history. The nation was not only universally triumphant in arms, but the most distinguished in Europe in the cultivation of the arts and sciences. Under the patronage of John I. and his son Henry, a spirit of enterprise was fostered; new countries were discovered; and Henry, an able scholar and mathematician himself, was surrounded by the learned men of every nation in Europe.

Sensible of the blessings of peace, John was at great pains to strengthen the bonds of friendship with Castile; and, though the first general of the age in which he lived, he was equally distinguished as a peace-maker^s. John I. died at Coimbra on the 14th of August 1433, in the 77th year of his age, and 48th of his reign. /

EDWARD, who succeeded to the crown, was

A.D. 1438. perhaps as good, and certainly as learned a King as his father, though far inferior as a general.

At the solicitation of the Princes Henry and Ferdinand, a second expedition left Portugal, with the avowed intention of taking Tangiers. After a siege of thirty-eight days, the Christians were obliged to retire from before the city. In this retreat they were surrounded by an innumerable army of Moors, through which they had to cut their way; but, after twelve days of almost continued fighting, and in want of every kind of sustenance, they were completely overpowered, and obliged to capitulate.

In this capitulation it was stipulated, that Ceuta should be restored to the Moors in exchange for what remained of the brave Christian army; and that Prince Ferdinand should be left with the infidels as a hostage, until the terms were fulfilled, and the son of the Emperor Zalabenzala remain with Prince Henry for the same purpose. This capitulation was never fulfilled, as the nation voted against it. Henry returned to Portugal, but did not appear at court; and the unfortunate Ferdinand was allowed to perish in a dungeon in Africa, without its being in the power of his brother to relieve him.

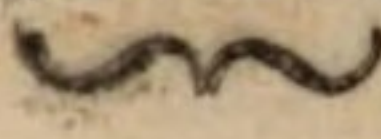
The plague raged with such fury in Portugal, that the prosecution of the war in Africa became

perfectly impracticable ; and the few remaining ^{A. D. 1447,} years of this Prince's reign were spent in endeavouring to ameliorate, in some measure, the sufferings of his disconsolate vassals. Edward died of the plague at Thomar, on the 9th of September 1438, after a most unfortunate reign of five years.

AFFONSO V. surnamed the African, succeeded his father in the 6th year of his age. The Queen his mother, daughter of Ferdinand I. of Arragon, was left the guardian of the young King, and Regent of the kingdom. But the nation refused to be directed by a Queen Regent ; and the Infant, Don Peter, as the eldest of the late King's brothers, was in a manner compelled to take upon him the government of the kingdom, while the guardianship of the young King, and the other Princes, was left entirely with the Queen. This, however, she refused, and quitting Portugal, retired into Castile, where she died in 1448.

The regency of the Infant Peter is not marked by any circumstance which renders it worthy of the notice of the military reader. His unfortunate end will ever appear as a stain in the character of Affonso.

Determined to avenge the death of his uncle Ferdinand, and to recover the lost glory of the Portuguese in Africa, Affonso left Lisbon with

 **A.D. 1471.** a fleet of 220 sail in 1458, and disembarked at Alcacer Ceguer, about six leagues from Ceuta. This city was well defended, but the Portuguese, led on by Prince Henry, who had accompanied the King, were soon in possession of it. The young King distinguished himself very much in this first engagement; and after putting the fortifications into good order, and appointing Don Edward de Menezes, natural son of the first governor of Ceuta, captain-general of the city, he proceeded with the army to Ceuta.

The brave defence which this little place of Alcacer maintained against a powerful army of the Moors for fifty-three days, deserves to be read with every attention. The King was not so fortunate in an action with the Moors near the Sierra of Bennacofu, as in it he lost one of his bravest officers, the Count Don Edward de Menezes. Affonso returned himself to Portugal, but the war was continued against the Moors for almost the whole of his reign.

In 1471, he left Lisbon a second time with a powerful fleet and army, with a determination to take Argill, a rich and powerful city on the coast near Ceuta, which he accomplished by assault on St Bartholomew's day, though not without the loss of some brave officers. The inhabitants of Tangiers, alarmed at the fate of

Argill, abandoned their city; and it was taken A.D. 1481. possession of by Affonso without opposition. 

After this fortunate and glorious campaign, Affonso returned in great triumph to Portugal, where he married Joanna, the daughter and heir of Henry IV. of Castile, which laid the foundation of much cruel warfare in both kingdoms. On the death of Henry, Affonso claimed the crown in right of his wife; and it was also claimed by Ferdinand, King of Arragon, who was married to the late King's sister. Both were sworn Sovereigns by their respective partizans, and both took the field with powerful armies to make good their claims. A severe and bloody battle was fought near Toro, where each claimed the victory; and although Affonso was in most instances victorious in his engagements with the King of Arragon, yet in this he certainly had the worst of it; and as the nobles of Castile began to desert his cause, he was obliged to quit that kingdom, which, notwithstanding his voyages to France, &c. he never was able to get possession of.

For a short period during this reign, the peace between England and Portugal was interrupted. The Prince John, who, in the absence of his father, was proclaimed King, continued the war against Castile with some success. But it was

A. D. 1481. become so ruinous and distressing to both nations, that a peace was at last concluded. In 1481, Affonso was seized with the plague, which was devastating his kingdom, and died at Cintra in the 49th year of his age, and 46th of his reign.

JOHN II. found the kingdom in a most ruined state, from the continued foreign as well as domestic wars in which his father had been engaged. His first care was to meet the States-general of the nation, and to take such measures as seemed necessary for improving the internal state of the kingdom, and for reducing within bounds the overgrown power of the nobles. The Duke of Braganza fell a sacrifice to this reformation.

This King appears to have been more anxious to prosecute discoveries on the coast of Africa, than to increase his conquests in the interior. Under his auspices, navigation was much improved, and the ships of Portugal for the first time doubled the Cape of Good Hope. We find the Portuguese character at this period not more distinguished for their gallantry in the field of battle, than for the patience and perseverance, as well as noble-mindedness, with which they pursued their long voyages of discovery.

Columbus, on his return to Europe, after the discovery of America, landed first at Lisbon, and was received at the court of John with great éclat.

The reign of John II. was indeed glorious for A. D. 1497.
Portugal. But if we except a few troops sent to
reduce some rebellious tribes upon the coast of
Guinea, it offers nothing remarkable in a military
point of view.

MANUEL, Duke of Beja, the son of Ferdinand,
and grandson of Edward, the brother of Affonso
V. succeeded to the crown, as nearest heir to his
cousin. The long and glorious reign of this
great Prince is so replete with conquests and dis-
coveries, that I can do little more than glance at
the most remarkable.

The discoveries of John, and the internal im-
provements of the nation during his peaceable
reign, had tended much to increase the wealth as
well as power of the monarch. Fond of the same
pursuits, and aware of the advantages which had
been derived from the line of conduct adopted by
his predecessor, Manuel gave his whole mind to
the prosecution of his plans. At the time of
John's death, an expedition was about to sail to
complete the discovery of India by the Cape of
Good Hope. Manuel continued the equipment
of this expedition; and on the 9th of July 1497,
the great Vasco de Gama left the Tagus with
four ships and 160 men. On the 20th of No-
vember, he doubled the Cape of Good Hope;
and after touching at Mozambique, and other

A.D. 1449. places on the east coast of Africa, he arrived at Calicut in the month of May 1498. Gama coasted along India for some time after he left Calicut; but, returning towards Portugal, he arrived at Lisbon in September 1499.

The success of Gama induced the King to send out a larger fleet next year, which was intrusted to Pedro Alvarez Cabral. Having steered rather a westerly course, Alvarez, on the 24th of May 1501, discovered that part of the continent of South America to which he gave the name of Santa Cruz, and which is now known as the Brazils. Alvarez arrived at Calicut, and from thence sailed to Cananor; where, having obliged the King to acknowledge the sovereignty of the King of Portugal, and loaded his fleet with the spices and riches of India, he shaped his course for his native country, and, after a long and dangerous voyage, reached Lisbon in safety.

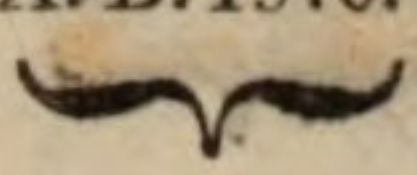
I have mentioned these two voyages to India, not because they are connected with the military history of the country, but on account of their forming so memorable an epoch in the history of Portugal, as well as in that of Europe. Vasco de Gama sailed a second time for India, with a determination to chastise the Zamorin of Calicut for his treachery to himself and to Alvarez de Cabral.

With Gama I must mention the names of

a Pacheco and an Albuquerque, who were a- A.D. 1570.
mongst the earliest of the Portuguese heroes
in India, but whose invincible valour was often
stained with acts of the direst cruelty. The
conquest of Goa was effected by Affonso Albu-
querque in 1570, and was defended against one
of the most powerful armies ever collected to-
gether in India. Indeed, the prodigies of valour
performed by the Portuguese in that distant world
appear almost incredible; and before the end of
Don Manuel's reign, almost the whole of India
had acknowledged his power, and agreed to pay
him tribute.

JOHN III. succeeded his father in 1521, at the
age of nineteen. He was more anxious to pre-
serve the conquests already made, than to attempt
others. Several cities in Africa were given up to
the Moors; and he appears to have been more
occupied in propagating the religion of the gospel
than in spreading the terror of his arms. He im-
proved and enlarged the University of Coimbra;
and I find, at this period, my far-famed country-
man, George Buchanan, first professor of Greek
in that celebrated school⁶. After reigning thirty-
five years, John died at Lisbon on the 11th of
June 1557, in the 55th year of his age.

DON SEBASTIAN succeeded his grandfather in
the third year of his age. The kingdom was go-

A. D. 1570.  verned for some time by the Queen his mother, and afterwards by his uncle, the Cardinal Henry; and although we may say with some truth, that during this minority the glory of Portugal began to decline, yet the memorable siege of Marzagam was never surpassed by any in the annals of this or any other country. This small place was known to be defended by a weak garrison, and the Emperor of Morocco determined to make a great effort for its recovery. An army of 8000 fuzileers, 15,000 cavalry, and 70,000 infantry, under the command of the Emperor's son, sat down before the fort, which then had not more than 700 infantry and 100 cavalry to defend it. When the news of this siege reached Portugal, the whole nation seemed anxious to fly to the aid of their countrymen. The Queen, who was at that time Regent, made every preparation for sending them assistance; and Alvaro de Carvalho, the captain of the fort, who was absent in Portugal, was immediately dispatched with 400 of the first nobility and gentry of the nation, who, without leave of their relations or the Queen, embarked in such numbers, that it was absolutely necessary to prevent them by force. Before Carvalho reached Africa, about 300 volunteers had found their way there from Algarve at their own expence, as also 100 soldiers, who had been dispatched along

with those volunteers by George de Silva. When ^{A. D. 1574.} Carvalho arrived, the whole of the garrison of Marzagam did not exceed 2600 men, including the troops which he brought with him, and a detachment from Ceuta. Yet this handful of brave fellows withstood a siege in which all the arts and stratagems of war were brought into play against them for nearly two months, and a considerable time after the walls were completely destroyed, and they even obliged the remains of the powerful army of the Emperor to retire with disgrace.

The young King was brave to a degree of rashness, and was early persuaded by the Jesuits, who were now in a manner the Sovereigns of Portugal, to engage in what was deemed a holy war. In 1574, he sailed for Africa, where he was successful in several partial engagements with the Moors under the walls of Ceuta and Tangiers. On his return to Portugal, he gave himself up entirely to the direction of the Jesuits. It would appear, that they wrought up his young mind to believe it possible to conquer the whole of Africa,—to erase the walls of Constantinople, and become master of Egypt. Every exertion was used to raise troops in his own kingdom, and about 3000 Spaniards, 3000 Germans, and 900 Italians, were taken into his pay.

In opposition to the prayers and intreaties

A.D. 1574. of his council, and of every well-informed person in the kingdom, Sebastian left Lisbon on this Quixotic expedition, with an army which did not amount to more than 18,000 men. The King of Spain, his uncle, had used every means in his power to divert him from this war, but in vain. The nation was reduced to beggary to pay his foreign troops, and the whole of his own nobility were commanded to attend him in the field. Before he could come to a general action with Abdelmelic, his army was reduced, by sickness and death, to about 12,000; and even then they were not in the best order, as there appears to have been neither subordination nor discipline in the camp. With this ill-organized and mutinous army, he was advised to march by land to Larache, a town at some distance from the place where the army had been disembarked, and to which he might have gone by sea.

On the fifth day's march, the numerous army of the Emperor of Morocco was discovered in an advantageous position on the banks of the river Luque. Sebastian halted for the night on the banks of a small river in sight of the enemy. Muley Mahomed, the dethroned Emperor, in whose favour the King of Portugal had taken up arms, had some partisans in his nephew's camp,

and 3000 were about to desert to the Chris-^{A.D. 1574.}
tian army; but the plot was discovered, and, 
by changing the whole of the officers of his army,
Abdelmelic put an end to the hopes of Mahomed.
Various were the opinions offered to Sebastian
during the night. Some were for retiring, others
for marching in a different direction, while the
disorderly army seemed determined to engage the
Moors. At day-light they marched from the en-
campment with the greatest firmness and regu-
larity, and advanced upon the enemy. The Por-
tuguese volunteers were in the advanced guard,
commanded by Don Pires de Tavora. The Ger-
man and Italian musketeers, with the Portuguese
troops from the garrison of Tangiers, formed the
right wing. The Spaniards formed the left wing,
while the Portuguese regiments of Noronha and
Silveira formed the centre. The reserve was com-
posed of the regiments of Tavora and Sequeira.
The cavalry, amounting to 1500, were formed into
a triangle in the rear of the infantry, and the bag-
gage was placed between the cavalry and infantry
of the right wing. The army of Abdelmelic was
drawn up in three lines, in the form of a crescent.
He had a body of 10,000 cavalry posted on each
flank, and a strong reserve of that arm in the rear
of his infantry. His first intention was not to en-
gage the Portuguese; but, finding that his life was

A.D. 1574. near a close, and fearful that his troops might desert his brother after his death, he resolved to fight.

The small army of the Christians no sooner came in contact with the troops of Abdelmelic, than it was completely surrounded. The battle was long and bloody. The young King was seen every where encouraging his brave soldiers, and performing prodigies of valour. But nothing could withstand the numbers of the enemy. Abdelmelic expired in the heat of the engagement, but this circumstance was concealed from his troops. The bravest leaders of the Portuguese were cut off in detail. Sebastian himself at length fell, and with him the flower of the nobility of Portugal. When the news of this disaster reached the kingdom, it is impossible to paint the misery and confusion which it occasioned. Every family in the nation had to mourn some brother, son, or father lost.

It is not my intention to enter into the intrigues which characterised the few years of the Cardinal Henry's reign, or to notice the perfidy which sold the crown to Philip II. of Spain. It is enough to observe, that in a few years we find Portugal, which, for many centuries, had been the most proud and independent monarchy in Europe, reduced to a province of that very Spain whose sovereigns she had often made tremble on

their throne. During the whole of the usurpa-^{A. D. 1574.} tion of the Philips, the troops of Portugal distinguished themselves in the defence of her foreign possessions, as well as with the Spanish armies in Europe. It was the policy of the court of Spain to annihilate, as much as possible, the military spirit of the Portuguese, and to corrupt the morals of the people, as the surest method of rivetting their chains. In this the Philips succeeded to a certain degree, but not so much as to prevent them from giving the crown once more to the rightful heirs of Don Sebastian. On the 1st of December 1640, by one of the best-conducted revolutions ever recorded in the history of mankind, the dominion of Spain was annulled, and John, Duke of Braganza, proclaimed King of Portugal. The courts of England, France, and Holland, soon acknowledged the justice of this act of the nation, and prepared to assist the new made King to support his rights. 1640.

JOHN IV. although he took the field, was no general himself, but he had the judgement to elect and to promote men of merit; and, in the war with Spain which followed the restoration of the monarchy, we find heroes who would have done honour to the times of his great ancestor, John I. No sooner was John proclaimed and crowned, than he proceeded to repair the fortifi-

A.D. 1643. cations of the frontier towns, and to put garrisons in them, taking care, at the same time, not to be the first to commit any act of hostility.

During the greater part of the years 1641-2, the war on the part of the King of Portugal was confined to the defence of the frontiers. The Spaniards, however, soon obliged him to take the field. A Portuguese army of 12,000 infantry, 2000 cavalry, with 20 pieces of artillery, and two mortars, under the Count of Obidos, assembled at Elvas on 6th September 1643. This army entered Spanish Estremadura, besieged and took Villa Verde, and afterwards laid siege to Badajoz; but, after taking two or three outworks, the Count judged it prudent to raise the siege, and retire towards Villa Verde. The King no sooner heard of the siege being raised, than he deprived the Count of the command, and gave it to Mathias de Albuquerque. Albuquerque followed up the intentions of the Count of Obidos; and, after destroying some villages, he besieged and took Alconchil, Figueira de Vargus, and Villa Nova del Fresno.

While the grand army was employed in this victorious career, the detached troops in other parts were not less successful. The Count of Castello Milhor, who commanded in the north, took Salvaterra, and various towns in Galicia. The troops in the province of Beira, under Don

Alvaro de Abranches, the Count de Serem, Don ^{A.D. 1656.} Rodrigo de Castro, and Don Sanchus Manuel, were universally successful, so that, during the whole of John's reign, the Spaniards, instead of making progress, lost ground considerably. And that party in the nation, which was so far lost to all honourable and patriotic feeling, as to wish their country a province of Spain, was completely annihilated.

During the usurpation of the crown of Portugal by the Philips, the Dutch had got a footing in India, as well as in America, and had taken possession of some of the principal colonies of the Portuguese. No support whatever was sent from the mother country to these colonies. Indeed, the court of Spain favoured, as much as possible, the successes of the Dutch in both continents, from an idea that, by lessening the dominions and the consequence of the nation, there was the less probability of its ever attempting to become again an independent state. No sooner was the revolution known in the colonies, than it was received with the utmost demonstrations of joy, and the King was unanimously proclaimed in almost every settlement. The war was carried on against the Dutch with redoubled vigour, and with some success, until a peace between the two powers put an end to these contests. In Africa

A. D. 1656. the Portuguese defended their colonies against the united powers of the Moors and Dutch with the greatest bravery, but with considerable loss, until the peace between John and the United States relieved them also from that powerful adversary. King John IV. died at Lisbon on the 6th of November 1656, in the 52d year of his age, and 16th of his reign. The Queen was left Regent of the kingdom, and governess of the young King; but Affonso VI. was far different from the Affonsos of other times, and seemed to have nothing but the name, in common with his illustrious ancestors. Addicted to secret vices from his earliest years, he was debilitated both in body and mind, and perfectly incapable of directing the councils of a great nation. The Queen mother was at every pains to place wise and virtuous counsellors around her son; but those only who favoured his passions and his vices, and who were of the lowest character, could have any influence on his conduct.

The King of Spain, taking advantage of the confusion which naturally followed the death of John, and the irregular conduct of the young Affonso, carried on the war with great vigour, but with indifferent success. In 1657 the Portuguese were rather unfortunate in the Alentejo. In 1658 Badajoz was besieged for six months by the army

under John Mendes de Vasconcelles ; but, after ^{A. D. 1659.} taking the fort of St Michaels, he was obliged to retire to Elvas. Philip, having collected together an army of 14,000 infantry and 5000 cavalry, with a powerful train of artillery, proceeded to invest Elvas.

The Spanish army sat down before Elvas on the 22d of October, and it was not till the month of January 1659 that a sufficient force could be brought together for its relief. During this period, the garrison suffered every misery, and at one time lost nearly 300 a day from disease. The Count de Cantanhede was able to take the field with an army which did not (after all this delay) amount to more than 8000 infantry, and about 3000 cavalry, and seven pieces of artillery. On the 13th of January, the army came in sight of the Spanish lines. Early in the morning of the 14th a detachment was sent from the Spanish camp, to reconnoitre the Portuguese army; it was found to be in apparently the greatest security, not even under arms. The officer, on his return, informed the Spanish general, Don Louis D'Aro, that there was no danger of an attack that day; and in consequence, the cavalry and additional troops which had marched to that part of the lines which was opposite the Portuguese camp, were withdrawn.

A.D. 1660.

The Count de Cantanhede had given his orders the night before for the attack, and only waited for the clearing up of a thick mist to form his army. About eight o'clock the whole were put in motion. The forlorn hope, consisting of about 1000 infantry chosen from the whole army, was commanded by Diogo Gomas de Figueredo. These were followed by an advanced guard of 3000 infantry and 1200 cavalry, under the command of the Count of Misquitella, Andrew de Albuquerque, and Lieutenant-general Achim de Tamarcourt. One half of the cavalry was placed on the flanks of this advanced guard; the reserve consisted of 2000 infantry. After a short but appropriate speech, the Count de Cantanhede took his station in the front of the main body of the army^r, and gave orders to advance. As soon as the movements of the army were perceived from the city, every disposition was made by the governor Don Sanchus Manuel, to take a part in the approaching engagement.

The Spanish troops were scattered in the trenches and completely off their guard, so that, when the advance arrived at their line, they found only a few battalions to oppose them, and these in the greatest confusion; and, although the Duke of St Germain and the Spanish generals made every effort to collect their troops, and al-

though they did make several desperate efforts to ^{A. D. 1660.} recover their lost ground, yet the Portuguese, led on by their brave officers, overcame every difficulty, and in a short time were masters of every part of the lines.

The remains of the Spanish army retired to Badajoz, but their loss was most severe; for, of the 14,000 infantry and 3000 cavalry which Don Lewis D'Aro had under his command at the beginning of the engagement, he could only muster, next day at Badajoz, about 5000 infantry and 1300 cavalry. The whole artillery, many stands of colours, about 5000 prisoners, and the whole of the baggage of the Spanish army, were among the fruits of this victory. It was dearly bought, however, on the part of the Portuguese, by the loss of Andrew de Albuquerque, one of the most distinguished officers of that period, and who fell mortally wounded while directing the assault of one of the enemy's fortified posts. Fernanda de Silveira, who fell in this action, deserves also to be mentioned. He was one of those who had sustained the honour of his country, while serving as a captain of cavalry with the Spanish armies in Flanders, and who had equally distinguished himself since the restoration, in the defence of his native soil, as well as in the defence of the colonies in America.

A.D. 1662.

This important victory was most joyfully received by the Queen Regent and the nation, and, if I may so express myself, it gave a death-blow to the hopes of Spain. The Count of Cantanhede, to whose judgement and valour the victory was in a great measure owing, was called to court as soon as circumstances would permit, and was received both by the Queen and young King, with the most flattering assurances of their gratitude and regard. The troops of Portugal were equally successful in the other provinces; but the great want of men in the nation, as also a want of money, obliged the Queen to have recourse to France for support; and notwithstanding some difficulties experienced in the first instance, a body of troops was sent to Portugal, under the command of the Earls of Schomberg and Inchiquin, the former a German, and the latter Irish. A strong body of troops was also sent from England, at first under the command of Lord Inchiquin; but afterwards, the whole were put under the orders of Schomberg.

Disgusted beyond measure with the conduct of the young King, the Queen resigned the regency, and retired altogether from public life. In 1662, France having concluded a peace with Spain, her troops were withdrawn from Portugal; and Philip determined to carry on the war with

more fury than ever. In 1663 a powerful army ^{A. D. 1663.} entered the Alentejo, took and destroyed Evora, and many of the principal towns in that province, and even threatened to sit down before the capital of the kingdom. The Earl of Schomberg and Count of Villa Flor, were most incessantly engaged in the formation of an army that might afford some hopes of putting a stop to the career of the enemy. This they were fortunate enough to accomplish, for after the battle of Amexial, ^{June 8.} in which the Spaniards lost upwards of 10,000, killed, wounded, and prisoners, and many of the first nobility of the kingdom, they were obliged to retire from Portugal altogether. Philip, enraged at this defeat, removed the Duke of Austria from the command of the army, and having spent nearly two years in organizing another army, he again ordered it to enter Portugal by the Alentejo. The Spanish troops penetrated to Villa Viçosa; but the brave Cantanhede, now Marquis of Marialva, who commanded the Portuguese army, coming up with them, another and a decisive victory was obtained near a place called Montes Claros. The Spaniards lost about 4000 killed, 6000 prisoners, 14 pieces of artillery, 86 stands of colours, and 1500 horses.

Notwithstanding these victories obtained by the valour of the army, the conduct and weakness of

A. D. 1667. the King seemed to threaten the nation with ruin; and it came to such a height, that the Prince Don Pedro, the King's brother, and third son of John IV. was unanimously called upon to take the management of the public affairs. The King was in a manner compelled to constitute his brother Regent, which he did, by signing a paper already prepared, on the 23d of November 1667. On the 27th of January Don Pedro was sworn Regent and heir to the crown, and immediately took upon him the reins of government.

Through the mediation of Charles II. who had married Catherine the daughter of John IV. and sister to the King and Regent, a peace was at last concluded between the courts of Spain and Portugal. This peace, which was effected by the Earl of Sandwich on the part of the King of England, was signed at Lisbon on the 23d of February 1668, by the Marquis of Elich on the part of Charles, who had succeeded his father, Philip IV. on the throne of Spain, and by the Duke of Cadaval, the Marquises of Marialva, Niza, and Govea, and the Count of Miranda, on the part of the Regent of Portugal⁷. This peace continued uninterrupted for thirty-six years, and although it increased the internal power and

wealth of the nation, it almost put an end to the ^{A.D. 1700.} military glory of Portugal.

In the beginning of the 18th century, when the succession to the crown of Spain was disputed, Don Pedro, who had been proclaimed King on the death of his brother in 1683, was induced to enter into what was called the grand alliance in favour of Charles, son of the Emperor Leopold I. An army of 25,000 infantry, and 3000 cavalry, was raised *de novo* in Portugal, for there was scarce a soldier existing who knew what war was. Thirteen thousand of these troops were paid by the allies.

The command of the province of Estremadura was given to the Duke of Cadaval; that of Beira to the Marquis das Minas; Tras os Montes to the Count of Alvor; Alentejo to the Count of Galveas, and Algarve to the Count of Avintes.

Portugal became the theatre of the war, for Philip V., grandson of Louis XIV. of France, who had been named by Charles II. as his successor, entered the province of Beira with a powerful army, passed through Castello Branco, crossed the Tagus at Villa Velha, took Portalegre, Castello de Vide, and other places in the Alentejo, without meeting with the smallest resistance. The Marquis das Minas, though not able to face the army of Philip, entered Spain as soon as it

A.D. 1704. had left the province of Beira, took and destroyed the town of Fuentes de Ginaldo, then a rich and flourishing place. He also took Monsanto, and dispersed a few troops under Don Francisco de Ronquillo. The Count of Galveas also made some exertions to carry the war into Spain, but was only able to destroy a few villages.

On the 28th of March 1704, the King of Portugal left Lisbon with Charles III. and joined the army at Almeida. The British troops were commanded by the Earl of Galway, the Portuguese by the Marquis das Minas. On the arrival of the two sovereigns, the allied army was put in motion, with the view of crossing the Agueda; but this they were unable to accomplish, as they were opposed by a powerful army under the Duke of Berwick, who was generalissimo of the French and Spanish forces. After giving directions for the armies to take the field early in summer, the two Kings returned to Lisbon.

1705. In 1705, a powerful fleet and army arrived from England, under the Earl of Peterborough, which, after leaving thirteen ships in the Tagus, proceeded with Charles to Catalonia. In the autumn of this year, the Marquis das Minas laid siege to Badajoz, but was unable to take it. Charles III. however, or rather the English army, took Barcelona. In the March following, the allied army

entered Spain in force, under the Marquis das Minas; several towns were taken, and the army under the Duke of Berwick, in an affair near Brozas, was obliged to retire. Alcantara, after a blockade of six days, yielded to the allies. From Alcantara the Marquis proceeded to Placentia, which, notwithstanding that it was defended by the Duke of Berwick, was also taken possession of, as were the cities of Cidade Rodrigo and Salamanca.

On the 27th of June, the allied army entered Madrid, where the Marquis proclaimed Charles King of Spain with great pomp. Had Charles pushed on at this time with the troops under the Earl of Peterborough, and arrived at Madrid in person, he might have secured the crown of Spain. But the time which ought to have been otherwise employed, was spent in vain pomp and parade, and in listening to the opinions of councils of war. The provinces of Estremadura and Old Castile had acknowledged the power of Charles, as also the kingdom of Leon; and Clement XI. even acknowledged his right, which had hitherto been denied. The Emperor of Morocco congratulated the King of Portugal on the success of his arms; but the delays of Charles, and the increasing power of the army under

A.D. 1706. Philip, obliged the Marquis das Minas to quit Madrid.

The army under Charles and the Earl of Peterborough, joined that under the Marquis das Minas and Lord Galway, on the 8th of August, when Peterborough was deprived of his command, and the Lord Galway appointed his successor; but, finding it impossible to attack the enemy with advantage, they retired upon Valencia, crossing the Tagus at Fuentes de Puena. They were followed by the Duke of Berwick, but no action took place, as the Duke carefully avoided a general engagement.

1707. On the 25th of April 1707, the Duke of Berwick found himself in a favourable position near Almanza, and, by a well-executed stratagem, he brought the allies to an engagement. The battle was long and bloody, and the allies were severely beaten, for not less than thirteen regiments were taken prisoners. This victory gave a complete turn to the affairs of Philip, and in a manner secured to him the quiet possession of the crown of Spain.

1708. On the 7th of July 1708, John V. who had succeeded his father, Don Pedro, married the Archduchess Maria of Austria, daughter of the Emperor Leopold; and though the courts of England and France endeavoured to draw him off

from the alliance with Charles III. yet John re-^{A.D. 1709.} mained firm to his engagement with his brother-in-law, and the war was continued. In 1709, a Spanish army was known to be encamped in the plains near Badajoz, and the Marquis of Fronteira, who commanded the allies at Elvas, resolved (on some false information) to attack their camp. The Spaniards were equally successful in this engagement. Lord Galway, and two British regiments, were taken prisoners, and the allies obliged to retire with great loss. If we except the battle of Candasnos, Philip was successful in every engagement during the following year. Miranda was taken possession of, as well as several other places; and though some of these were recovered, the allies were for the most part unsuccessful. At last, the death of Leopold called Charles to the throne of Austria, and Europe, wearied of the war, began to think of a general peace. Plenipotentiaries from the several nations met at Utrecht in 1713, and on the 6th of April 1716, the peace, which was there effected, was^{1716.} proclaimed in Lisbon.

Previous, however, to the general peace, the army of Philip, under the Marquis of Baz, laid siege to Campo Maior; and if we consider the immense force which was brought against this small place, and the brave defence which it made,

A.D. 1713. we shall find it equalled by few in the history of the world. Stephen de Gama, the governor of Campo Maior, is worthy of being recorded with the Pereiras, Menezes, and Albuquerque of old. The enemy's breaching battery is said to have thrown eight hundred shot daily. The trenches
1717. were opened on the 4th of October, the breach was practicable on the 24th; but, though the place was assaulted, the enemy were repulsed.

The impossibility of continuing to defend the breaches, and the impracticability of repairing them, suggested to Pedro Mascarenhas, who commanded the troops, the idea of stopping them up with brush-wood. On a second assault being attempted, this brush-wood was set on fire, and it threw the enemy's troops into such confusion, that, after a severe loss, they were a second time driven back, and finally obliged to raise the siege.

During the peace which succeeded the treaty of Utrecht, the Portuguese nation increased in wealth, and John, who had received the title of Faithful from Benedict XIV. found sufficient occupation in building the palace of Mafra, and other religious houses, and in framing laws for the government of his kingdom.

1735. In 1735, some dispute having arisen between the courts of Spain and Portugal, about the possession of the colony of Sacramento in America,

an immense army was raised by John, but it never ^{A. D. 1735.} came into action, as the dispute was amicably adjusted, through the mediation of England and Italy; and the peace continued uninterrupted during the rest of his days.

On the 31st of July 1750, Joseph I. succeeded ^{1750.} his father on the throne of Portugal. The first twelve years of this reign offer nothing to the military reader; and the long period of forty-seven years peace, had in a great measure changed the very nature of the people.

In the spring of 1762, the advance of a Spanish ^{1762.} army into Portugal, excited considerable alarm in the nation, and the King became sensible of the impolicy of neglecting his military force. John V. had corrected some flagrant abuses during the continuance of the war at the commencement of his reign, and had published a code of regulations, which are still in existence, but even these had fallen into disuse in many respects; the army was therefore ill organised, and worse officered.

Six British regiments of infantry, a regiment of light dragoons, and eight companies of artillery, were sent by this country to assist in repelling the French and Spanish armies, who threatened to invade Portugal; and the Count of Schambourg Lippe, an officer who had been educated

A.D. 1762. in the school of Frederick of Prussia, was invited by the court of Lisbon to take the command of the army. The command of the British forces was also intrusted to Lippe; and, with the commission of Marshal-General, the organization of the army, and direction of the war, was in a great measure committed to him.

July. In the month of July, the combined armies of France and Spain were collected in the neighbourhood of Cidade Rodrigo, to the amount of 42,000 men, with a train of artillery of 93 pieces. Lippe, who had not been above three months in the country, found himself obliged to take the field against this powerful and well-organised force. But as it was necessary to leave some troops in the north, to watch the motions of the Spaniards in Galicia, as also garrisons in most of the frontier towns, the army under his command, including the British force already mentioned, did not exceed fourteen or fifteen thousand men.

The advance of the enemy's army crossed the Coa on the 23d of July, and took possession of the Castle of Rodrigo without firing a shot. On this movement Lippe collected his army near Abrantes, that it might be ready to act according to circumstances. Almeida was besieged by the enemy, and though there was little probability of its being able to stand against so superior a force,

yet the Count determined to make a diversion in ^{A. D. 1762.} its favour, and if possible delay its fall. Lieutenant-general Townsend was dispatched into upper Beira with seven regiments of Portuguese infantry, one British regiment, and two regiments of Portuguese cavalry, and the first position which he took up was at Viseu; other small detachments were sent to Celorica and Guarda. But the fall of Almeida, through the cowardice of the governor, rendered these measures of little effect.

Two days after the fall of Almeida, the enemy advanced some leagues on the road to Celorica, but soon broke off to the left, and marched upon Sabugal and Penamacor, while a considerable column took the road of Alcantara for Spain. As soon as Lippe was apprized of these movements, four British regiments were marched to the Ponte de Murcella, to secure a junction with General Townsend, and the rest of the troops were placed in eschellons of brigades between the Tagus and the Mondega, and ready to be moved to any point. The castle of Celorica was abandoned two days after the fall of Almeida, and taken possession of by the enemy, so that the route to Coimbra or Oporto was completely open to him.

During the march of the enemy's troops upon Sabugal, a skirmish took place with their advance, in which the Portuguese regiment of volunteer

A. D. 1762.

cavalry suffered some loss, and was driven back. The governor of Salvaterra, notwithstanding the most positive orders to defend it to the last, thought proper to capitulate before the enemy came within sight of the place. The commandant of Segura did the same, which laid the road to Castello Branco completely open. But, instead of moving upon Coimbra or Oporto, the whole of the enemy's force was united at Castello Branco, about the middle of September. As Count Lippe presumed the enemy was intent upon entering the Alentejo, he drew off his troops from the Ponte de Murcella, and took up a position near Abrantes; while General Townsend, who had got to the neighbourhood of Pinhel, was directed to fall back upon the Tagus, in order to join the main body of the army. Lord Lennox was left with a small force in the neighbourhood of Almeida; and Townsend, taking the route of Celorica and Ponte de Murcella, joined the army. When Lippe observed, that instead of marching by Alcantara, the combined armies were collected at Castello Branco, he supposed that the Count d'Arada intended to pursue the route which had been taken by Philip V. when he entered Portugal in the beginning of the succession war, and that he would attempt to cross the Tagus at Villa Velha; and he was convinced

that, if this route was followed, the whole of ^{A. D. 1762.} the frontier towns of the Alentejo must inevitably fall into the hands of the enemy, and with them the whole of that open province, as well as the kingdom of Algarve, while, with his small, ill-organised, and still worse-disciplined army, he was perfectly unable to offer any opposition in the field. As, however, the nature of the country offered some difficulties, and the enemy were compelled, in a manner, to cross the Tagus at Villa Velha, if determined to enter the Alentejo, General Burgoyne, who had been detached on a secret service, and who had taken a major-general, several officers, and about 200 men from the enemy, in an unexpected attack which he made upon Valença, was directed to occupy the south bank of the river at this point, and at the same time to observe their movements on the river, so as to secure his right. General Burgoyne fortified his position on the banks of the Tagus, and took advantage of the ground in his favour to erect batteries, which in some measure commanded the road to the bridge. The old Castle of Villa Velha was taken possession of and fortified, and the Count of St Jago, with 1000 infantry, 200 cavalry, and 8 pieces of cannon, occupied the pass of Alvito, and commanded the road which leads by Sobreira Formosa, while the army

A. D. 1762. under the commander-in-chief was encamped near the village of Masan, with the view of being near to support the posts in the mountains.

The Count Arada sent about 600 men from the army at Castello Branco, to make a reconnoissance in the direction of Villa Velha, and take up a position in front of General Burgoyne; another body of about 4000 encamped on the heights of Sarzedos and Montegarde, in front of the Count of St Jago; while a third corps, of between 2000 and 3000, encamped in front of the pass of St Simon, which was occupied by a major and 300 of the allied army. The enemy, after repeated trials, being convinced of the difficulty of forcing General Burgoyne from his position, resolved to open the roads by the mountains, with the view of marching upon Abrantes. The Count of La Torre, who commanded the enemy's advance, ordered 600 men to cross the river Alvito, with an intention of outflanking the troops under the Count of St Jago on their left; while another strong detachment marched upon St Simon, and drove in that advanced post of the allies.

After considerable opposition, the enemy got possession of the heights of Villa Velha, which obliged Count Lippe to withdraw his small force from that position; but, on the appearance of the enemy in front of St Simon, the Count of

St Jago was reinforced with two additional bat-^{A.D. 1762.}
talions of Portuguese infantry.

The officer who commanded the castle of Villa Velha surrendered with his garrison, although it was in his power to have crossed the river, and joined General Burgoyne. After gaining possession of these heights, the enemy advanced in that direction with a corps of 6000 men, which rendered it necessary to withdraw the advanced post at Moita, which was outflanked; and a strong force appearing in front of St Simon, Lord Loudon was detached with four British regiments to take a position in front of Sobreira Formosa, so as to secure the retreat of St Jago.

On the 3d of October, Count Lippe ordered ^{October.}
the troops to be withdrawn from the Alvito. Lord Loudon's brigade was directed to remain upon the heights of Falhadas until the Portuguese troops had reached Sobreira Formosa, and then, after destroying the works which had been constructed by the Count of St Jago, to retire also. The rear-guard, which was composed of the grenadier companies of Lord Loudon's brigade, and fifty men from each regiment, and twenty-four Portuguese, with fifty British dragoons, was attacked about five o'clock in the afternoon by the enemy's advance, and almost the whole of the cavalry horses were killed or wounded; but, upon

A. D. 1762. bringing up the whole of the brigade to the support of the rear-guard, the enemy retired from the heights, and did not attempt any thing further during the retreat.

The six thousand men which, after the fall of the heights of Villa Velha, had crossed the mountains at Porta Cabrão, left six pieces of cannon near the passage of the Tagus, with a guard of 100 horse, and 200 provincial grenadiers, which they deemed sufficient, as the river was considered impassable. General Burgoyne, observing the carelessness and inattention of these troops, directed Colonel Lee, with a detachment of 250 British grenadiers, and 50 dragoons, to pass the Tagus at a ford a little above the enemy's position, and endeavour to destroy the guns, or bring them off. Colonel Lee performed this duty with great judgement. The enemy were taken completely unawares, a great number were killed, and 6 officers, 36 dragoons, with 60 artillery-mules, taken. A considerable quantity of stores and provisions was destroyed, and four of the guns spiked.

On the 5th of October, the grand army advanced three leagues, and the head-quarters of the Count d'Aranda was in Sarzedas. The advance, under the Count de la Torre, took up a position in front of Sobreira Formosa, and 1000 men were kept con-

stantly at work repairing the roads. Lippe had ^{A. D. 1762.} directed the Count of St Jago to drive the country during his retreat through the Lower Beira, and every thing that could not be carried off was destroyed; so that the enemy now found himself in a desert, without being able to procure either provisions, cars, or peasants to assist them; the inhabitants had abandoned their villages, and carried off every thing. The army had to be supplied with every necessary from Spain. The soldiers were harassed with fatigue in making roads, and the cavalry-horses destroyed in conducting provisions, &c.

General Townsend was detached with his division to join Lord Lennox, who was in the neighbourhood of Guarda, and who was ordered to advance upon Belmont, with the view of cutting off the communication with Almeida and Cidade Rodrigo. The army under General Townsend, when united with that under Lord Lennox, amounted to fourteen battalions of infantry, and two regiments of cavalry, but was represented as consisting of 20,000 men; and a rumour was spread, that a large force had arrived from England. To give countenance to these reports, which spies were paid to circulate, General Townsend had no sooner arrived from Pinhel at Codos, about a league from St Domingo, and after a march of

A.D. 1762. fifty leagues, than he counter-marched through the mountains, and appeared in the Beira, performing, with his troops, another march of forty leagues. “Which duty,” says the Count Lippe, “was punctually and skilfully performed by General Townsend, as well by the great abilities of that officer, as by the patience and perseverance of the Portuguese soldiers, who, notwithstanding the destruction of their shoes, marched with the greatest alacrity and pleasure over the rocky mountains, leaving very visible marks of their bleeding feet upon the stones.”

While Townsend was manœuvring in this manner, the allied army, under the commander-in-chief, broke up from the encampment at Massam, and moved towards the left upon St Domingo, and the head-quarters were for some days at Sardoal; but, at last, Lippe determined to take up a position on the Sierras of Lercas and Sta Clara, with his left upon the river Codos, near its junction with the Zezere, and his right upon the Tagus, near the mouth of the rivers Frio and Codeiro, and thus await the enemy, should he attempt to advance so far.

To those acquainted with the country, the importance of this strong position must be obvious; but to such of my readers as have only the map to consult, it may be proper to observe, that every

road which led to Abrantes was guarded. The ^{A.D. 1762.} nature of the country rendered the cavalry arm perfectly useless, and with regard to artillery, every advantage was on the side of the allies; while the difficult nature of the defiles through which the enemy's infantry must pass, rendered them in some measure defensible by the small army under Lippe.

General Burgoyne remained on the south side of the Tagus, and the communication with him was kept up by a chain of posts. The alarm excited in the rear of the enemy by the troops under General Townsend, kept a considerable body of their troops engaged. On the 15th of October the Count d'Aranda began to withdraw his advanced posts, and in a few days he retired with the whole army to his former position at Castello Branco. Lieutenant-general Townsend had passed Fundao, and had his advance-guard in Lardosa in the Lower Beira, which obliged the Spanish General to detach a strong body of French troops to observe his motions. After a halt of some days at Castello Branco, the enemy's cavalry, and a strong body of infantry, took the road for Spain, crossing the Tagus at Alcantara. As soon as the enemy began to retire upon Castello Branco, Major-general Fraser was sent with four regiments of infantry, and two of cavalry,

A. D. 1762. by the road of Sobreira Formosa, with directions to attack his rear as often as he could do so with advantage. General Burgoyne advanced between Nisa and Montalvoa, while General Townsend occupied Penamacor and Monsanto.

Notwithstanding the retreat of his cavalry, and a body of infantry, the Count d'Aranda kept his head-quarters at Castello Branco, and about twenty-eight battalions of French and Spanish infantry, and ten squadrons of cavalry, and sixteen pieces of artillery, were retained with him. Count Lippe, with his small army, determined to attack this force; but, owing to some mismanagement, the troops could not get together in time, and d'Aranda retreated at leisure, leaving his sick and wounded in the hospital at Castello Branco, with a letter, recommending them to the attention of the allied army.

November. This retreat of the enemy in the month of November, after so many and difficult movements, together with the ruin of their numerous cavalry, made it evident that the campaign was at an end, and that they had retired to winter-quarters. Under these circumstances, Count Lippe permitted his troops to enter into quarters. General Townsend's division was quartered in the Lower Beira; the British troops in Sardoa and its neighbourhood, with a part of the Portuguese

army, but the greater part of the Portuguese ^{A. D. 1762.} regiments were cantoned in the Alentejo; while General Burgoyne's division formed a corps of observation between Nisa and Portalegre. Reinforcements were sent to the different frontier garrisons, and British officers were for the most part appointed governors. Major-general Clarke was made governor of Elvas; Colonel Vaughan, who had distinguished himself in India, was appointed governor of Arronches; and a Lieutenant-colonel Sharpe, who commanded the 2d regiment of Elvas, now the 17th infantry, was sent to assist the Marquis de Prado, an old Spanish nobleman in the service of Portugal, who was governor of Campo Maior.

Count Lippe was deceived by the retreat of the enemy, and was guilty of an error in allowing his troops to disperse into quarters; for, had the enemy been aware of this oversight, they might have taken possession of the Alentejo without a blow. Lippe, however, being on the alert, soon collected his army in the neighbourhood of Fustios; and the brave defence of Marvao, which was garrisoned by a few troops under a Captain Brown, gave the commander-in-chief time to make his arrangements. General Burgoyne occupied the heights of Castello de Vide and Marvao, while the enemy was encamped in the neighbourhood

A.D. 1762.

of Valença. Nine regiments were marched to Portalegre, and every exertion made to defend the frontiers. The position in front of Portalegre, and in the neighbourhood of Valença, was chosen with great judgement, and the enemy's advance was expected as an event that would in some measure decide the fate of the campaign.

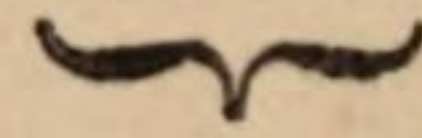
The first place which the enemy attempted to take was Marvao. This small town was attacked by a corps of 4000 or 5000 men, but the firmness of Captain Brown not only saved the place, but obliged the enemy to retire with considerable loss. Oguela, another small fort, was next attempted, but here the bravery of Captain Braz de Carvalho and his small garrison was equally conspicuous, as the enemy were driven from before the place with considerable loss, and obliged to abandon the attempt. The resistance which the Spaniards met with in these small places, had a visible effect upon their movements, and convinced them that any attempt upon the Alentejo, would require both active and decisive measures, which the lateness of the season in some measure would not admit of. On the 15th of November, therefore, the whole of their force retired into Spanish Estremadura, to take up their winter-quarters, and Portugal, with the exception of Almeida and Chaves, was freed from the enemy.

On the 22d of November, a Spanish Major-general arrived at the head-quarters of Count Lippe, with the news of the signing of the preliminaries of peace at Fountainbleau on the 3d curt. and proposing, on the part of the Count d'Aranda, a suspension of arms. Major-general Crawford was dispatched by Lippe with his answer to the Spanish commander-in chief, agreeing to the suspension, which put an end to the campaign of 1762, and also to the war.

A.D. 1762.

C H A P. III.

History of the Present Army of Portugal.

A. D. 1763.  WHILE the war of 1762 continued, Count Lippe made little progress in the organization or discipline of the troops of Portugal. He got a number of English and German officers introduced into the service; and as soon as the peace was concluded, he began to form the army upon a new plan. Having well considered the resources of the country, he established its military force upon a rational and permanent basis. The Prussian code was strictly followed in that system of regulations which he drew up for the use of the troops, which continues in force at the present moment. The officers were raised from the degraded state in which they had been kept by the old laws, and every exertion was made to stimulate those who were considered worthy of being retained in the service, as well as the young officers who were promoted on his recommendation. When Count Lippe was appointed Marshal-general of

the Portuguese army, the subaltern officers were appointed by the captains of companies; and although the captains were commissioned by the sovereign, they had not the rank of gentlemen. A. D. 1767.

It is natural to suppose that the army, under such circumstances, must have been in a very indifferent state. This is abundantly evident, from the slight sketch which I have given of the campaign of 1762 in the preceding chapter. Many of the most important posts were surrendered to the enemy, either through treachery or fear, on the part of the officers who commanded, and the “point of honour” was very little attended to, by officers even of the highest rank. The genius and indefatigable exertions of Lippe were able to overcome these radical defects; and as the Portuguese peasant shewed the same aptitude for military exercises in those days which has so distinguished him in latter times, the army was brought in a very short period to a most reputable state of discipline and organization; and when Lippe gave up the command, I believe few nations in Europe had a more efficient or better regulated standing army than Portugal *. But a long con-

* In my preliminary observations on the present state of the Portuguese army published last year, I have said that Count Lippe was banished from Portugal by monkish superstition and intrigue. I

A.D. 1767. tinuance of peace is by no means favourable to the preservation of a well-organized army; and accordingly we find, that very soon after Lippe's departure from Portugal, the army returned in a great measure to its former wretched condition. His regulations were preserved in form, but the spirit of them was allowed to evaporate. The Marquis of Pombal, for reasons well known in Portugal, used his utmost endeavours to render a military life discouraging to the native nobility, while he was solicitous to procure, and introduce into the service, every description of foreign officers. He wished to have an army, or rather a military force, but only such a force as he could depend upon for carrying his deep-laid schemes into effect. His system rendered even the best regulations of Lippe nugatory. When her present Majesty came to the throne, the troops were in as bad a state as when her royal father was proclaimed. And although the Marquis of Pombal was removed from the ministry, the evils which his councils had given rise to in the orga-

stated this upon the authority of a Portuguese officer of high rank, who served with Lippe; and who told me, that the Count's amour with a professed nun, by whom he had a daughter, having been discovered, the outcry against him was so great, that he was obliged at last to leave the kingdom. I have since learnt that this was not the case.

nization of the army, were by no means remedied. A.D. 1793.

The degraded state of the Portuguese nation and its army, did not pass unheeded. Many of the ancient nobility of that kingdom were sensible of both the one and the other, and exerted themselves to procure some reform. But the intrigues of others of their own body, and also causes which it is needless now to mention, rendered every measure of the patriotic few, either altogether abortive, or of little effect. The Duke d'Alafoens, from his near relationship to the crown, was appointed Marshal-general of the army, at an age when he was more fitted for retirement; and although the Prince of Waldeck, a German officer of considerable abilities, held the high rank of Marshal of the army for a short period, the reforms which he accomplished perished in a manner with himself.

The Queen of Portugal, in conjunction with the other sovereigns of Europe, refused in the first instance to sanction the revolution in France, and war was declared against that republic; but this war was confined for some time to trifling actions at sea, in which the French were greatly superior, as the navy of Portugal had been equally neglected with the army, and her trade was totally unprotected. In 1793 it became neces-

A. D. 1794. sary to take a more active part in the war, and six regiments of infantry, with a small train of artillery, joined the grand Spanish army, in the neighbourhood of Rossilon. This small force was commanded by Lieutenant-general Forbes, a Scotch officer, who had been introduced into the army by Count Lippe. A great number of the young nobility accompanied General Forbes in this expedition, and their conduct at CERET, where they were engaged for the first time with the French army, was highly to their credit, and the behaviour of the troops throughout the whole of that campaign gave abundant proofs, that there was yet among them some remains of the valour of their ancestors.

The disasters of 1794 obliged the Spanish army to evacuate Rossilon, and take a position on the confines of Catalonia, and the greater part of the summer was spent in that mountainous country. On the 17th November the French army surprised the sixth regiment of Portuguese infantry, and took it prisoners. On the 20th, the allied army was routed in the sanguinary battle of the Bridge of Molins, where the Spanish Commander-in-chief, the Count d'Union, was killed. On the 28th the important fortress of Figueiras was taken by the French. The Portuguese troops bore a distinguished part in every action, but the

French arms had got a decided advantage, and ^{A. D. 1795.} the allies were routed in every engagement. 

In 1795 Spain was compelled to agree to a treaty of peace, which was signed at Basilea in the month of July. In this treaty it was stipulated, that the Portuguese prisoners should be restored with the Spaniards; and that his Catholic Majesty should use his mediation with the court of Lisbon, to procure an extension of the articles of the treaty to that power. General Forbes returned to Lisbon with the remains of his little army; but the mediation of Spain had no effect in separating the Queen of Portugal from the common cause, so that the war with France was continued.

DON RODRIGO DE SOUSA CONTINHO, a nobleman of great abilities, and still greater virtues, was appointed minister of the marine, soon after Portugal had refused the mediation of Spain; and his exertions in fitting out the ships of war, and in regulating the convoys for the different colonies, put a stop to the ravages of the French privateers upon the trade of the country.

When Bonaparte was engaged in the blockade of Malta, a squadron of the Portuguese navy, under the Marquis of Niza, annoyed him very much, and even pursued him to the coast of Egypt. So keenly was the annoyance felt by the

A.D. 1801. French ruler, that he declared in his orders to the army of the East, “ *That the time would come when he would make Portugal pay with tears of blood, for their daring to offer an affront to the republic of France.*”

In 1801 the First Consul of France prevailed upon the King of Spain to declare war against Portugal, and to permit a French army to pass through his dominions for the purpose of assisting him to take possession of that kingdom, which it was agreed they should occupy, until England agreed to a definitive treaty of peace.

Spain declared war against Portugal in the month of February, and the ensuing spring was spent by both nations in preparing for an active campaign. The Spanish troops were collected in Galicia, Castile, and Estremadura, and a division of the French army, under General Le Clerc, crossed the Pyrenees.

The Duke D’Alafoens still commanded the Portuguese army, and, from his great age, was ill calculated to organize that force which so many years of peace and neglect had suffered to fall into decay; yet the activity displayed by the subordinate officers on this occasion was highly creditable to themselves, and to the nation. A small corps was formed in the Tras os Montes, for the defence of that frontier; another watch-

ed the province of Beira, while what was called ^{A. D. 1801.} the grand army was stationed in the Alentejo, under the command of the Marshal-general.

The Prince of Peace took the command of the grand army of Spain, which was collected in the neighbourhood of Badajoz. Several weeks were spent by his Highness in contemplating the grandeur of a numerous military force, without making any progress in the conquest of the country which he came to invade. This was fortunate for Portugal, as she was but ill able to cope with such powerful enemies, and this country was too much occupied in the conquest of Egypt, to send any assistance. After some time spent in negotiation, a peace was obtained, but at a high price. This peace is celebrated as the treaty of Badajoz, and was only effected through the mediation of a large bribe to Lucien Bonaparte. Yet, severe as the terms were, it must be acknowledged that this peace saved the Portuguese nation.

The melancholy situation of her most faithful Majesty, obliged his Royal Highness, JOHN, Prince of Brazils, to take upon himself the regency of the kingdom at the commencement of the nineteenth century, and a new æra began to dawn upon Portugal.—Men of real talents and patriotism were elevated to the first places in the councils of the Prince, and the army and navy of the

A.D. 1806. country became the proper objects of their care and attention. I have already remarked the rapid progress which the Conde of Linhares made in the organization of the navy, after Spain had made peace with France. The minister Araujo was equally zealous with regard to the army.

In 1806 the regiments of cavalry and infantry were regularly numbered, and a distinguishing uniform was assigned to each *. But, what was

* Previous to 1806, each corps was known by the city or district where it had been embodied, or by the name of the colonel who commanded; but at that period the regiments were regularly numbered. The army was divided into three grand divisions, each consisting of so many brigades of cavalry and infantry; an addition was made to the uniform of each corps, of edging of a particular colour, which served to point out the division of the army to which the corps belonged: Thus all the regiments which compose the division of the north have yellow edging; those of the centre division have white; and those of the southern division red. I have no hesitation in saying, that I think the author of these regulations has shewn a great deal of judgement, not only in the manner in which the army is divided and brigaded, but also in the minor details of uniform, &c. The manner in which the rank of officers is pointed out by their uniform appears to me to be extremely good; and I think the difference of the uniform between the troops of the line and the militia is also proper. In the Portuguese army, an ensign wears an epaulet of fringe upon the left shoulder; a lieutenant wears it upon the right shoulder; and a captain wears two fringe epaulets; a major wears a bullion epaulet upon

of more consequence, the whole system was re-^{A. D. 1806.}
vised; the internal economy of the whole was
inquired into, and many abuses which had crept
in upon the regulations of Lippe were fully cor-
rected. Yet even these reforms, so necessary for
the salvation of the country, were viewed by
many with an eye of jealousy; and the intrigues
of those whose interest it was to keep up such
abuses, prevented their ever being put an end to.

The neutrality which Portugal preserved during the first years of the present war, was more expensive than actual warfare, for the demands of Bonaparte seemed to increase in proportion as they were acceded to. The Prince Regent was

the left shoulder, and a fringe one upon the right; a lieutenant-colonel wears the bullion epaulet upon the right shoulder, and the fringe upon the left; and a full colonel has two bullion epaulets: all officers, however, from the colonel downwards, wear scale epaulets; a brigadier-general wears two wrought bullion epaulets with one star, his uniform is a plain blue coat, with broad gold lace on the collar and cuffs; the major-general has the same uniform, but the collar and cuffs of the coat are embroidered; the lieutenant-general has two rows of embroidery; and the marshal has the whole of the collar and cuffs covered with embroidery, but no epaulet. These are the most obvious distinctions in the dress of the officers of the line. The officers of the militia are distinguished in the same manner; but as the troops of the line have all gold mountings, and the militia silver, it is known at once to which service an officer belongs.

A. D. 1807. compelled to join the continental powers in 1807, and to shut his ports against Great Britain. The French ruler, however, appears to have had but little faith in the promises of that sovereign, as a French army was judged necessary to enforce their execution. The remonstrances of the Prince were of no avail, and an army of 20,000 men, under General Junot, took possession of Lisbon on the 27th of November. The steady friendship of our most gracious sovereign, and the virtue of the ministers of Portugal, saved the royal family on this trying occasion. JOHN, Prince of Brazils, and Regent of Portugal, with the Queen mother and his august family, was induced to abandon the dominions of his ancestors, and take refuge in one of his distant colonies in the new world.

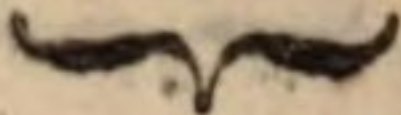
When the Prince Regent quitted Lisbon, he directed his faithful vassals to receive the French army as friends ; and so rigidly were his orders attended to, that not the smallest opposition was attempted, and a handful of worn-out ragged troops took possession of the whole kingdom. Subsequent events have fully proved that it was not cowardice on the part of the Portuguese nation, that permitted this French army to take possession of their country, but rather that respect for the orders of their Prince, which, under the most

trying circumstances, they have always endeavoured to conform to. But certainly a set of cowardly villains did exist, who had sold both their country and their Prince, and who were ready to deliver them up to the destroyer of the human race. A.D. 1807.

When Junot took possession of Portugal, the regular military force of that kingdom consisted of four regiments of artillery, twelve regiments of cavalry, and twenty-four regiments of infantry; there was also an irregular force of forty-three regiments of militia, fifteen hundred light troops, and thirteen hundred invalid artillery; and, by a printed return now before me, it appears that the effective strength of the whole was as follows:

Cavalry, infantry, and artillery of the	
line, effective,	53,204
Engineers,	150
Militia, effective,	34,400
Total,	87,754

The first measure of the French general was the reduction of this force, and the greater part of it was disbanded in the beginning of 1808. The militia and peasantry were also disarmed, and every effort made to render the nation unable to resist his power. About twelve thousand men

A. D. 1808.  were permitted to volunteer, or rather compelled to march to France, under the Marquis of Alorca; and when, in obedience to the directions of his master, Junot declared that the house of Braganza had ceased to reign in Portugal, scarcely any vestige of a native military force existed in the country.

In organizing the army of Portugal, Count Lippe determined that there should be only twenty-four regiments of regular troops, called infantry of the line; and in his book of regulations, the effective strength of each corps and company is accurately detailed. According to these regulations, every regiment upon the peace establishment consisted of seven companies: the first company was commanded by the colonel of the regiment; the second, by the lieutenant-colonel; and the third, by the major; while each of the remaining four companies had a captain. The staff consisted of the adjutant, quarter-master, surgeon, six assistant surgeons, a drum-major, armourer, and provost; and the effective strength of each regiment was twenty-three regimental, and fifteen staff officers, and seven hundred and sixty-eight non-commissioned officers and privates. Though this was considered the effective strength of the regiment, any number of officers or men might be borne upon the esta-

blishment as *aggragados*. An *aggragado* literally ^{A. D. 1808.} signifies a person attached to the regiment, without being a member of the corps; and by the military law of Portugal, officers who are *aggragados* receive only half the pay and allowances of effectives. They are always the junior of their respective ranks, and cannot be promoted until they become effective. When talking on this subject with Marshal Beresford, his Excellency observed, that it was much to be regretted, that some regulation similar to this did not exist in the British service. When an officer is suspended from rank and pay by the sentence of a general court-martial, in the British service, he is allowed to go where he pleases, until the time of his suspension is expired; and it not unfrequently happens, that during this period he becomes lost to himself as well as to the service; he is removed from the society of his brother-officers, and thrown upon the world under a depression of spirits, ill calculated to resist temptation, and therefore he seldom escapes ruin. In the Portuguese service, on the contrary, an officer who is *aggragadoed* is kept with his corps, and obliged to do the duties of his station; he receives indeed a pittance of his pay, but the punishment is even more severe, in my opinion, than that of suspension in the British service.

To return from this digression; as long as the

A.D. 1807. government of Portugal, established by his Royal Highness the Prince Regent, was allowed to exist, the country continued tolerably quiet, but no sooner was the edict of the 1st February made public, than the genuine feelings of the people began to appear.

In his first address to the people of Portugal, which, as a curious document, I have given in a note *, Junot makes use of soothing language. His object was only “to liberate the Prince Regent from the thralldom of England.” But when

* “Le Gouverneur de Paris, Premier Aide de Camp de Sa Majesté l'Empereur & Roi, Général en Chef, Grand-Croix de l'ordre de Christ de Portugal.

“Habitans de Lisbonne,

“Mon armée va entrer dans vos murs. Elle y venait pour sauver votre port et votre Prince de l'influence de l'Angleterre.

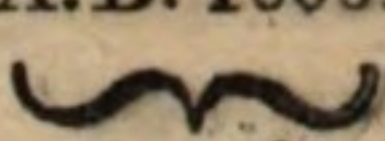
“Mais ce Prince, si respectable par ses vertus, s'est laissé entraîner aux conseils de quelques méchans qui l'entouraient, et il est allé se jeter dans les bras de ses ennemis.

“On l'a fait trembler pour sa propre personne, ses sujets n'ont été comptés pour rien, et vos intérêts ont été sacrifiés à la lâcheté de quelques Courtisans !

“Habitans de Lisbonne : soyez tranquilles dans vos maisons, ne craignez ni mon armée, ni moi ; nous ne sommes à craindre que pour nos ennemis, et pour les méchans.

“Le grand Napoleon mon maître m'envoie pour vous protéger ; je vous protégerai.

“JUNOT.”

he had got a firm footing in the nation, he consi- A.D. 1808.
dered it no longer necessary to wear the mask, 
and on the 1st of February 1808, the following
edict was published in Lisbon:

*“ Le Gouverneur de Paris, Premier Aide de Camp
de S. M. l'Empereur et Roi, Général en Chef:*

“ Habitans du Royaume de Portugal,

*“ Vos intérêts ont fixé l'attention de S. M.
l'EMPEREUR, Notre Auguste Maître; toute irreso-
lution doit cesser; le sort du Portugal est arrêté,
et son bonheur futur est assuré puisque NAPOLEON
LE GRAND le prend sous sa toute puissante protec-
tion.*

*“ Le Prince du Brésil en abandonnant le Por-
tugal, a renoncé à tous ses droits à la souverai-
neté de ce Royaume. La Maison de Bragance a
cesse de regner sur le Portugal. L'EMPEREUR
NAPOLEON veut que ce beau pays soit administré
et gouverné tout entier en son Nom, et par le
Général en Chef de son Armée.*

*“ La tâche que cette marque des Bontés et de
la Confiance de mon Maître, m'impose, est diffi-
cile à remplir; mais j'espère y réussir aidé des
travaux des hommes les plus instruits du Royaume,
et de la bonne volonté de tous ses Habitans.*

A.D. 1808.

“ J’ai établi un Conseil de Gouvernement pour m’éclairer sur le bien faire ; des Administrateurs seront envoyés dans les Provinces pour s’assurer des moyens d’améliorer l’Administration et d’y établir l’ordre et l’économie. J’ordonne que des Routes soient ouvertes, et des Canaux creusés, pour faciliter les Communications, et faire fleurir l’agriculture et l’industrie nationale, ces deux branches si nécessaires à la prospérité d’un pays, et qu’il sera facile de relever avec un Peuple Spirituel, Patient et Brave. Les Troupes Portugaises commandées par leurs Chefs les plus recommandables, ne feront bientôt plus qu’une même famille, avec les soldats de *Marengo*, d’*Austerlitz*, de *Jéna*, de *Friedland*, et ne rivaliseront avec eux, que de courage et de discipline. Les finances bien administrées assureront à chaque employé le prix de son travail ; l’instruction publique, cette mère de la Civilisation des peuples, se répandra dans chaque Province, et les Provinces d’*Algarve*, et de *Beyra-Alta*, auront peut-être aussi un jour leur Camoens. La religion de vos Pères, celle que nous professons tous, sera protégée et secourue par la même volonté qui a su la rétablir dans le vaste Empire Français, mais délivrée de superstitions qui la déshonorent : la Justice sera rendue avec Equiré, et débarrassée des longueurs et de l’arbitraire qui l’entravaient. La Tranquillité

Publique ne sera plus troublée par un brigandage ^{A. D. 1808.} affreux, résultat de l'oisiveté, et s'il existe des scélérats incorrigibles, une bonne police en délivrera la Société : l'hideuse mendicité ne traînera plus ses haillons dans la superbe Capitale, ni dans l'intérieur du Royaume ; des maisons de répression seront établies pour cela ; le pauvre estropié, y trouvera un asyle, et le fainéant y sera employé à un travail nécessaire, même à sa conservation.

“ *Habitans du Royaume de Portugal*, soyez rassurés et tranquilles ; repoussez les instigations de ceux qui voudraient vous porter à quelque révolte, et à qui il importe peu de faire répandre le sang, pourvu que ce soit du sang continental : livrez-vous avec confiance à vos travaux, vous en recueillerez le fruit ; s'il faut que vous fassiez quelques sacrifices dans les premiers momens, c'est pour mettre le Gouvernement à même d'améliorer votre sort. Ils sont d'ailleurs indispensables pour l'entretien d'une grande Armée, nécessaire aux vastes projets du GRAND NAPOLEON : son Oeil Vigilant vous a fixé, et votre bonheur futur est assuré ; vous lui serez aussi chers, que ses sujets Français ; mais méritez ses bienfaits par votre respect et votre soumission pour ses volontés.

“ Donné au Palais du Quartier-Général, à Lisbonne le 1. Février 1808.

“ JUNOT.”

A.D. 1808.

No sooner was this edict published, than the spirit of discontent began to prevail in every quarter of the kingdom, and had it not been the powerful Spanish army which occupied the distant provinces of the country, and the French force in the centre of the nation, the revolt would have been general. On many occasions the peasantry could not conceal their feelings. In the beginning of May, the Spanish forces were removed from Portugal *, in consequence of the revolution, which had extended from the south to the north of Spain, and was spreading throughout the Peninsula. On the 6th of June, the French governor of Oporto, M. QUESNEL, was made prisoner by the citizens, and the government of his Royal Highness, the Prince Regent, restored to full power in that city. On the 7th the royal standard of Portugal was hoisted at the castle of St John de Foz, and the usurpation of the French declared at an end.

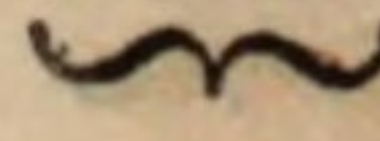
The whole of the cities and towns in the northern provinces followed the example of Oporto; and, in a few days, the detachments of the French army on the north of the Mondego were either made prisoners or obliged to retire upon Lisbon.

* The Spanish troops in the provinces of Estremadura and Alentejo were disarmed and made prisoners.

The troops who had been disbanded returned voluntarily to their standards, and the peasantry in thousands chose their own leaders, and demanded to be led against the enemies of their country. The most respectable of the inhabitants of the different cities formed themselves into Juntas, and, in the name of JOHN, Prince Regent of Portugal, directed the public affairs. The revolution spread rapidly from the northern provinces to Algarve, and at Olham, on the 16th of June, the royal house of Braganza was once more restored to its legitimate sovereignty. A. D. 1808.

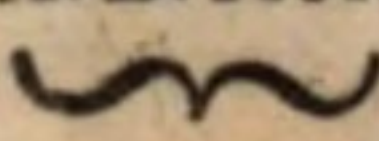
Oporto, however, as it had been the first to throw off the yoke, was in some measure the most active, and what was called the *Supreme Junta* was established in that city. The Right Reverend Bishop was appointed president of the Junta, and the veneration in which his Excellency was held by the populace, tended, on many occasions, to allay the fury of the revolutionary mob, which threatened, in some instances, to destroy the innocent as well as the guilty. The most trifling suspicion of being friendly-disposed towards the enemy, was often sufficient to involve whole families in ruin.

The organization of the military force in the north of Portugal, was intrusted to General Bernardino Freire d'Andrade. The news of the re-

A. D. 1808.  volution were immediately conveyed to his Majesty's Sloop Eclipse, which was cruising off the Bar of Oporto, and every means used to secure the assistance of this country. In the meantime, Junot, having been informed of these movements of the Patriots, directed General Loison, who had about 2600 men under his command at Almeida, to march upon Oporto, and take vengeance on those who had presumed to rebel against his authority. Loison quitted Almeida on the 17th of June, with about 2500 infantry, 100 cavalry, and three field-pieces. He arrived at Lamego on the 30th, without meeting with any opposition. On the 21st he crossed the Douro at Regoa, and, while he was at dinner at Mezamfrio, he was informed that the peasantry were collected upon the hills, and that they seemed determined to defend the pass of "Os Padroes de Teixeira." Junot replied to the messenger who brought him this information, "That he had intended to sleep at that place, but he had now changed his mind, and at four o'clock he should proceed and chastise the rebels." But before he had concluded his dinner, he was farther informed that an immense multitude had attacked his baggage-guard at Regoa, and that they were in danger of being overpowered. On receiving this information, the column which was advanc-

ing in the direction of Oporto was counter-march-^{A. D. 1808.}
ed, and, after a pretty smart engagement with
the peasantry, in which Loison received a slight
wound, they were dispersed. The baggage having
been secured, the French army encamped for the
night in an olive-grove, where they were kept very
much upon the alert. On the morning of the 22d,
Loison took possession of the heights on the banks
of the river, and the villages within his reach
were given up to be plundered by his troops. In
the afternoon they were collected again, and he
proceeded to chastise the rebels, who still held
their position at the pass of Os Padroes da Teix-
eira; but, upon viewing this position, and the
multitude which was collected to defend it, he
preferred re-crossing the Douro, which he accom-
plished next morning.

This sudden retreat of the French army, gave
great animation to the Portuguese who had engag-
ed in the revolution, and brought many thousands
to the standard of liberty. The Portuguese army
was divided into three columns, which were named
after the districts from which they had been collect-
ed, viz. Villa Real, Amarante, and Guimaraens,
and the whole, it is said, amounted to more than
sixty thousand. The enemy were pursued by this
force, and lost part of their baggage in crossing
the river. On the 24th the greater part of this

A. D. 1808.  numerous, but unorganised force, crossed the Douro in pursuit of Loison, and the restoration of the legitimate authorities was proclaimed in Lamego. Loison quitted Lamego a few hours before the Portuguese entered it, but he was immediately followed and overtaken at the village of Juvantes, where it appeared he had halted for the night. On the advance, however, of such an immense multitude, he continued his retreat, having formed his small force into a close column, with the baggage in the centre.

In proportion as the multitude got fatigued by their long day's march, they gave up the pursuit, and began to disperse; and Loison was permitted to take up a position on the top of a hill, where he passed the night. On the 25th the pursuit was continued, and at Castro d'Airo, the Portuguese having pressed upon the rear of the French column, an action took place, in which there was some loss on both sides. In this retreat the French lost upwards of 300 men, two howitzers, and a great part of their baggage; and in the various actions which took place, a Friar, named José Joaquim da Assumpsam, bore a most distinguished part.

As General Loison continued to retreat in the direction of Vizeu, it was supposed he intended to attack Coimbra, which gave considerable alarm

to the inhabitants of that city. But when his A.D. 1808. small force arrived at Vizeu, they were not permitted to enter the town, but encamped in the neighbourhood, and every thing they required was regularly paid for. This, it is reported, was owing to orders from Junot, who began to conceive it possible to conquer the revolutionary spirit which was so rapidly spreading, by measures of conciliation. From Vizeu, Loison proceeded to Mongoalde, and reached Celorica without being opposed; but the advance of the pursuing army having come up with him between Trancoso and Pinhel, he found some difficulty in reaching the garrison of Almeida on the 1st of July.

JUNOT, during this period, passed his time very uncomfortably in Lisbon, for every hour brought fresh accounts of the progress of the revolution, which it became impossible for him to conceal from the inhabitants of that city. He published an edict, declaring, that whatever city or town took up arms against the troops of France, should be given up to pillage,—the houses should be erased, and the inhabitants given up to the sword; and that every individual found with arms in his hands should be instantly shot. A council of war was called, at which twenty-five general officers assisted. A conciliating address to the inhabitants of Portugal was

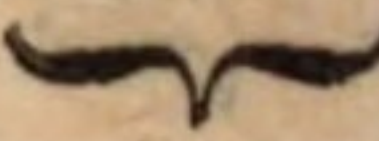
A. D. 1808. drawn up by this council, and Pedro de Mello Brayner, president of the supreme court of justice in Oporto, was directed to proceed to the north with this address, and to use his influence in crushing the *rebellion*. Brayner left Lisbon on the 28th of June, but on his arrival at Leiria, he was surrounded by the peasantry, and narrowly escaped being massacred. He escaped to Alcobaça, and from thence returned to Lisbon; and Junot's address served only to irritate the patriots.

The revolution, I have already mentioned, commenced in Algarve nearly at the same period that it took place in the north, and its progress was equally rapid. The French troops in that kingdom were either expelled or made prisoners by the 22d of June; and the appearance of the expedition under General Spenser on that coast, added greatly to the efforts of the patriots. The Marquis of Olham, the legitimate governor of Algarve, was brought from his retirement, and made president of the provincial council; and persons were dispatched to Seville, Gibraltar, and other places, to communicate the glad tidings of the restoration of Algarve. Kellerman, who commanded in the Alentejo, kept the people in subjection for a week or two, but being recalled, with the troops under his command, towards Lis-

bon, that province was not backward in proclaim-
ing the restoration of their beloved Prince.

A. D. 1808.

On the 2d of July General Margaron left Lisbon with a division of the French army, for the purpose of reducing the northern provinces to subjection. He met the advance of the patriots at Carvalhos, three leagues south of Leiria. But as this advance consisted only of a few unarmed peasants, it quickly retreated, and threw the unprotected inhabitants of that city into great confusion. They were truly unprotected, for they had not a single piece of artillery to aid them in their defence, and not above one or two cartridges for the few musketry which they possessed. On the 5th the enemy's advance reached Canoeira, in the suburbs of Leiria, where the patriots fell upon them unawares, and made five prisoners. This success tended in some measure to reanimate the inhabitants, but their joy was of short duration, as the whole of the enemy's force, amounting to between four and five thousand men, arrived and took possession of the city. The patriots offered considerable resistance in several parts of the town, which so enraged the French General, that the whole were given up to the fury of his troops. Many were surrounded, and became the victims of the French soldiery. The streets and houses were filled with the lace.

A.D. 1808.  rated bodies of the murdered citizens, and this horrid butchery continued as long as victims could be found ; then it was that Margaron declared by public proclamation, that Leiria *was pardoned*, and that the inhabitants might return to their houses in safety ; he added, that whoever failed to return within twenty-four hours, should be put to death wherever they were found.

On the 7th Margaron left Leiria, and proceeded in the direction of Thomar. The fate of Leiria was published by Junot in Lisbon, and the consequence of this rebellion pointed out ; destruction, the Portuguese were told, was the certain issue of all such attempts to set aside the authority of the great Napoleon. The bulletin of Junot on this occasion concluded by saying, “ That the destruction of the insurgents would have been greater, had not the General restrained the just indignation of his soldiers ; but that the moment the battle was at an end, their *moderation* was equalled only by their *valour*.” This bulletin, or rather the cruelties practised at Leiria, terrified the inhabitants of Thomar, and on the approach of Margaron, a letter of humble submission was sent to him, imploring his forgiveness for the symptoms of insurrection which had appeared amongst them, and declaring their attachment and fidelity to the ruler of France. In this manner they saved their own

lives, and prevented their town from being pillaged. A contribution of 10,000 crusades was levied upon the convents and clergy, and the town-council were made to renew their oath of allegiance to the Emperor Napoleon. A. D. 1808.

Margaron left Thomar on the 12th, after receiving a second contribution of money, and returned to Lisbon. On the 3d of July Loison quitted Almeida a second time, and marched in the direction of Guarda. As he advanced towards this city, there was some appearance of opposition, which was made a pretext for delivering it up to be plundered by his troops. From Guarda Loison proceeded to Fundão, which he found deserted. At Atalaya the peasantry made considerable resistance, which so exasperated him, that he caused the village to be surrounded with his troops, and gave directions that neither man, woman, nor child should escape. After a march, marked by nothing but murder and rapine, he arrived at Santarem on the 12th, and was appointed to take the command of a column of ten or twelve thousand men, destined for the reduction of the provinces in the north.

Kellerman, Thomieres, and Brenier, were the Generals who commanded this force under Loison, and Alcobaça was fixed upon as the point of union. On the 15th Thomieres marched with

A. D. 1808. his brigade to the small place of Nazareth on the coast, which he completely destroyed; while Loison, with the troops under his immediate command, kept the direct road for Leiria.

The French army passed Leiria, and encamped on the heights of Olhalvas. Here Loison was informed that a powerful Spanish and Portuguese army was advancing to meet him. He halted for two days in this place, and instead of advancing, he began once more to retire upon Lisbon, where he arrived on the 20th. The brigade of Thomieres took up its former position at Caldas, Obidos, and Peniche.

On the 23d, Junot reviewed the whole of the French troops in and about Lisbon; and on the 25th Loison was dispatched into the Alentejo, with the brigades of Margaron and Solignac.

General Leite, who had taken an active part in the restoration of this province, and who had been intrusted by the provincial government with the organization of the army, made every exertion to collect a force, that might afford some hope of his being able to meet this division of Loison, which consisted of 6000 men. The French general, however, was so rapid in his movements, that he reached Evora before General Leite could collect more than 2400 Spaniards and Portuguese. Between seven and eight o'clock

on the morning of the 29th, the French troops ^{A. D. 1808.} appeared before Evora. The city was bravely defended for a considerable time, and when no longer tenable, the little army under Leite retired in the greatest order to Olivença. The defenceless inhabitants fled to the churches and convents, thinking these places would be respected, and their lives would be saved; but in this they were soon undeceived. The soldiers were informed by their general, that they had permission to plunder the city, and the same scenes of horror and bloodshed which had taken place at Leiria, were repeated with many aggravations in Evora.

When Loison's thirst for blood and plunder was in some measure satiated, he began to regulate the affairs of the city. He caused magistrates to be elected, and formed a junta, which continued to govern in the name of the Emperor of France for ten or twelve days. The conduct of the French army in Evora had the effect of terrifying the greater part of the inhabitants of the Alentejo into submission. A deputation was sent to Loison from Estramoz, soliciting his pardon and protection, which was granted, and he entered that town as a friend on the 2d of August. From Estramoz he proceeded to Elvas, which Kellerman had kept in subjection; but instead of marching upon

A.D. 1808.

Badajos, then in the hands of the Spanish patriots, and which he threatened to treat as he had done Evora, he retired upon Portalegre, and took the road for Abrantes.

General Leite, after quitting Evora, retired to Olivença with the few troops that remained with him, and he remained in this place during the continuance of the French army in the Alentejo; on the retreat of that army he marched to Campo Maior. The whole of the patriots in Alentejo were united about the end of August; and in obedience to the directions of the Supreme Junta in Oporto, they were put under the command of the Count of Castro Morim.

It may be proper to remark here, that as yet there was no force in existence that could be called a *Portuguese army*; for although many of the regiments disbanded by Junot had been in some measure re-embodied, yet the great mass of the patriotic force was nothing more than an unarmed, disorganized mob. The public treasury had been drained by the enemy, who was still in possession of the capital; and every description of arms had been carefully removed from the provinces; so that it was not in the power of those who took the direction of affairs to organize any respectable force. The Junta of Oporto, however, was indefatigable; application was made to Don Do-

MINGOS DE SOUZA COUTINHO, the ambassador of A.D. 1808. his Royal Highness the Prince Regent of Portugal, in London, to procure a supply of arms from this country; and the venerable Bishop of Oporto, the president of the Junta, published an address to his flock, in which he intreated them to come forward with what horses they could spare, to mount the cavalry. General Frieré, assisted by his Excellency Don Miguel Pereira Forjoz *, used his utmost efforts to organize a force in the north; and the soldiers who had belonged to the army disbanded by the French, were called upon to join their regiments at Oporto, Viana, Braga, Chaves, Braganza, and Vizeu. A voluntary contribution was collected in Oporto, which amounted to a considerable sum in money, besides many other articles, very necessary for the equipment of the troops, but these came far short of what was really required. Various measures were adopted to create some permanent revenue; and too much praise cannot be given to the Supreme Junta, which managed the civil affairs, or to the two distinguished officers who were charged with the organization of the army †.

* DON MIGUEL is the present secretary of state, charged with the departments of foreign affairs, war, and marine.

† The revolution in Portugal was not free from those dis-

A. D. 1808.

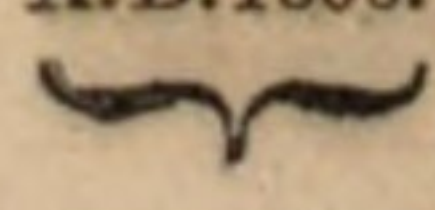
The first official communication of the revolution in Portugal which was brought to this country, was contained in a letter from Sir Charles Cotton to the secretary of the Admiralty, dated on board the *Hibernia*, off the mouth of the Tagus, the 22d of June, inclosing one from the commander of his Majesty's sloop *Eclipse*, dated off Oporto, June the 20th. Captain Creyke, in his letter to Sir Charles Cotton, states, that between the 10th and 20th of June, Oporto had undergone two revolutions: That after the Spanish army had delivered up the city to the Portuguese patriots, and after the national flag had been hoisted in every part, the French had succeeded in establishing their authority, through the weakness and ill-judged measures of the governor, Luis d'Oliveira: That the French had kept possession of Oporto until the 16th of June, when, attempting to substitute the French flag for the national colours, in the procession of *Corpus Christi*, they had been overpowered by a numerous force, which, headed by the clergy, had taken possession of the city; and that not only

graceful scenes, which are common in all popular revolutions: General Freire fell a sacrifice to the insubordination of his troops, and was literally torn to pieces by the multitude, which not many days before had hailed him as the saviour of their country.

the French troops, but every person suspected of ^{A. D. 1808.} favouring them, had been imprisoned.

On the 12th of July a British force, under the command of the Marquis of Wellington, (then Sir Arthur Wellesley), sailed from Cork. It arrived at Corunna on the 20th, and its assistance was offered the Spanish Junta of Galicia; but Lord Wellington was told that the Spaniards did not want men; that they only required from the British government money, arms, and ammunition. On leaving Corunna, Lord Wellington proceeded to Oporto, where he had a conversation with the Bishop and Supreme Junta; but before determining on what plan he should pursue, he judged it prudent to consult with Admiral Sir Charles Cotton. The fleet was therefore ordered to cruize off Oporto, and his Lordship proceeded to the mouth of the Tagus, where the British fleet under Sir Charles was blockading that port.

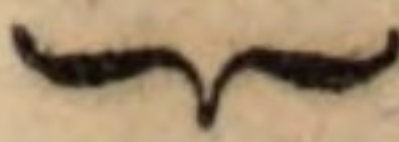
While Lord Wellington was on board the *Hibernia*, he received a letter from General Spenser, who was off Cadiz with about 6000 men, which had been destined to act with the Spanish forces under Castanos, but which had likewise been refused permission to land in Spain; Lord Wellington therefore directed General Spenser to join him, and the British force which had arrived from England with his Lordship was landed in Mondego bay, on the 7th of August.—Next day

 A.D. 1808. the troops under General Spenser landed in the Mondego river, and the whole were united near the small village of Lagos. On the 9th the advanced guard moved forward on the road to Lisbon, and on the 12th the British army reached Leiria, where it was joined by the Portuguese troops, amounting to about 1600. On the 15th the advanced guard came up with the rear of the French army at Obidos, where a slight action took place. Lord Wellington halted the army at Caldas on the 16th, and proceeded to reconnoitre the enemy's position.

The advance of the French army, which amounted to about 6000 infantry, and 500 cavalry, under General Laborde, was most advantageously posted on the heights in the neighbourhood of the village of Roliça; but as Lord Wellington learnt that a reinforcement, under Loison, was hourly expected, he determined to attack that position without delay. On the 17th the army moved forward from Caldas in three columns. The right column, which consisted of 120 Portuguese infantry, and 50 cavalry, was destined to turn the enemy's left, and penetrate into the mountains in his rear. The left column, consisting of Major-general Fergusson's and Brigadier-general Bowne's brigades of infantry, three companies of riflemen, a brigade of light artillery, with 20

British and 20 Portuguese cavalry, was destined ^{A.D. 1808.} to ascend the heights at Obidos, and turn all the posts on the enemy's left; and the centre column, consisting of General Hill's, General Nightingale's, General Crawford's, and General Fane's brigades, 400 Portuguese light infantry, the British and Portuguese cavalry, a brigade of nine-pounders, and a brigade of six-pounders, was ordered to attack Laborde's position in front.

The columns moved from Obidos about eleven o'clock A. M. General Fane's riflemen were immediately detached into the hills on the left of the valley, to keep up the communication with the centre and left columns, and to protect the march of the former along the plain. General Hill's brigade, formed in three columns of battalions, moved on the right of the valley, and was supported by the cavalry, in order to attack the enemy's left, while Generals Nightingale and Crawford kept the high road. General Nightingale's brigade was formed in the plain immediately in the enemy's front, where it was supported by the 45th regiment, and the light infantry companies of General Crawford's brigade. The enemy retired from his position by the passes into the mountains, with the utmost regularity and celerity, and, from our want of a sufficient body of cavalry, his loss in the plain was very trifling.

A. D. 1808.  The position which Laborde took up in the mountains was very formidable, yet Lord Wellington determined to attack it also, and his orders were given accordingly. The Portuguese infantry were directed to move up a pass on the right of the whole; the light companies of General Hill's brigade, and the 5th regiment, moved up a pass next to the right; while the 29th regiment, supported by the 9th, took a third pass, and the 45th and 82d regiments took passes on the left. Many of these passes were very steep, and covered with brushwood, which retarded our brave fellows considerably, and our loss was severe; yet the enemy was driven from every point, and we gained possession of the tops of the mountains. The 5th, 29th, 9th, and 45th regiments, were particularly distinguished on this occasion. The enemy's loss was very great, and three pieces of cannon were left in our possession. Laborde retreated upon Torres Vedras, where he was joined by the division under Loison. On the 18th Lord Wellington advanced to Lourinha, to protect the landing of the troops which had arrived under General Anstruther; and on the 19th and 20th, the army continued to move on towards Lisbon.

GENERAL JUNOT, who was aware of the reinforcements that were daily arriving on the coast of Portugal, and particularly of the army which

was expected under Sir John Moore, determined ^{A. D. 1808.} to try the fate of a general action before these troops could arrive. With this view he quitted Lisbon on the 19th, and joined the army at Torres Vedras. The whole of the French force in Portugal was united on this occasion, and on the morning of the 21st he came up with the British army near the village of Vimeira.

This village stands in a valley through which the river Maceira passes; in the rear it is protected by a mountain which touches the sea on the west, and is separated on the east by a deep ravine from the hills over which the road from the northward, and Lourinha to Vimeira, passes. The greater part of the army, and eight pieces of artillery, were posted on this mountain. General Fane, with his riflemen and the 50th regiment, was posted on a hill on the eastern and southern side of the town, which was commanded by the mountain on the west. He was supported by General Anstruther's brigade, and half a brigade of six, and the same number of nine-pounders. The cavalry and reserve of artillery were in the valley between the hills.

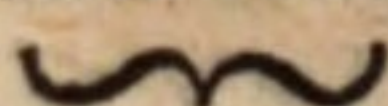
A body of the enemy's cavalry appeared, about eight o'clock in the morning of the 21st, on the left of the British line, on the heights over which the road passes to Lourinha, and it was soon ob-

A.D. 1808.  vious that the attack would be made upon the advanced guard in that position. The commander-in-chief, therefore, directed General Fergusson's brigade, and three pieces of artillery, to cross the ravine, and form on these heights, while General Nightingale, with his brigade, and the brigades of Generals Bowes and Ackland, were moved in the same direction. The Portuguese troops, supported by General Crawford's brigade, were formed on the heights which terminate at the landing-place of Maçeira.

The enemy's attack began in several columns upon the heights where the great body of the British troops had been placed, and, notwithstanding the fire of the riflemen on the left, they advanced in that direction close up to the 50th regiment, and were checked and driven back only by the bayonets of that corps. The 2d battalion of the 43d regiment was closely engaged on the road which leads to Vimeira, and prevented their reaching that town; while they were repulsed on the right by the bayonets of the 52d and 97th regiments, and, after several desperate efforts, were driven back in confusion, with the loss of seven pieces of cannon, many prisoners, and a great number of officers and soldiers killed and wounded. The attack which was made upon General Fergusson's brigade was also most gallantly re-

pulsed by the 36th, 40th, and 71st regiments. ^{A. D. 1808.}
These corps charged as soon as the enemy approached them, and obliged him to give way at every point. This brigade, supported by the 82d and 29th regiments, and by the brigades of Generals Ackland and Bowes, and the Portuguese troops, pursued the flying columns of the enemy for several miles, taking from them six pieces of cannon, and a great many prisoners.

In this action, in which the whole of the French force in Portugal was employed, under the command of Junot in person, the enemy was greatly superior in artillery and cavalry, and although (from the nature of the ground) not above the half of the British force was engaged, he lost not less than thirteen pieces of cannon, twenty-three ammunition waggons, with powder, shells, stores of every description, and 20,000 rounds of musket-ammunition. One general officer was wounded and taken prisoner, another was found dead on the field of battle, and the number of killed, wounded, and prisoners, was very great. Lieutenant-general Sir Harry Burrard arrived on the field during the action, but refused to give any directions until the enemy were beaten,—when, by preventing the advance of General Fergusson's brigade, he certainly lessened the importance of the victory. Junot re-

A.D. 1808.  treated from the field to Lisbon, and, by the ringing of bells, and firing of cannon, he announced to the inhabitants of that city that he had obtained a signal victory, and that in a few hours the British would be driven into the sea. Yet, notwithstanding every precaution, the true state of things soon became known, and he found some difficulty in keeping the joy of the inhabitants within bounds.

On the 22d of August, the day after the battle, Lieutenant-general Sir Hew Dalrymple joined the army, and took the command, so that this army was commanded by three different general officers in the course of twenty-four hours. A few hours after Sir Hew joined, General Kellerman arrived with a flag of truce from Junot, in order to propose an agreement for a cessation of hostilities, for the purpose of concluding a convention for the evacuation of Portugal by the French troops. A suspension of arms was agreed upon between Lord Wellington and General Kellerman on the 22d, and on the 30th of August, the celebrated convention of Cintra was concluded and ratified at Lisbon. The articles of this convention were generally condemned both in England and Portugal, and gave rise to some military proceedings, which kept the public in a state of agitation for a considerable period afterwards.

The French army was expelled from Portugal ^{A. D. 1808.} by the treaty of Cintra, and the government established by his Royal Highness the Prince Regent restored to full power in that kingdom; but it soon became apparent, that no time was to be lost in preparing against a second invasion. The British ministry were well acquainted with the internal resources of the country, and calculating upon the assistance which could be sent, they pointed out to the Portuguese Government the plan which it ought to pursue, and that Government certainly entered into the views of the British cabinet with great zeal. The assistance sent from this country, which was absolutely necessary to bring the resources of the nation into play, was most gratefully received. The troops which had been disbanded by Junot, when re-embodied, came far short of forming such a force as it was necessary to bring into the field, so that, independent of its being necessary to organize and discipline them, new levies, to a great extent, were absolutely required.

The population of Portugal, calculated at one million two hundred and fifty thousand males, subject to the recruiting laws, was capable of furnishing a sufficient number of recruits; but money to pay these recruits, and a General capable of putting the whole in motion, were not to be

A. D. 1808. found in the Peninsula. For these the British government was applied to, and they were readily granted; a loan was negotiated in England for the Prince Regent, and Major-general Beresford, an officer whose superior abilities were just beginning to be developed, was sent out to take the command of the Portuguese forces, with the local rank of Lieutenant-general*.

On the arrival of General Beresford at Lisbon, in February 1809, he was appointed Marshal and Commander-in-chief of all the forces of Portugal, by the Government of that country, and was endowed with very full and extensive powers.

A number of British officers of different ranks were permitted at the same time to join the army of the Prince Regent, and were presented by his Royal Highness with commissions superior to those which they held in the British army. Assisted by these officers, Marshal Beresford began his labours soon after his appointment, and, by a firmness and perseverance almost unequalled, he brought the Portuguese army to its present state of discipline and organization; or, in other words, organized the present well-disciplined and highly distinguished army of Portugal.

* Thirty thousand of the Portuguese troops were taken into the pay of Great Britain.

If we consider for a moment the difficulties ^{A.D. 1809.} which General Beresford had to encounter, as a stranger, in a great measure, to the manners and customs of the people he was appointed to command, and unacquainted with the forms as well as whims of the government he had undertaken to serve, and take into account also some military appointments made at home, and which the result has proved to be injurious to the great object in view, as well as the opposition on many points which he has met with, both in England and in Portugal, we cannot but be surprised, that in the short period of eighteen months, and during a state of actual warfare, he could bring this army to such perfection; for certainly not more than eighteen months had elapsed between the formation of this army and their gallant conduct at Busaco.

Before Marshal Beresford was vested with the command of the Portuguese forces, a number of British officers had been permitted to join that army, particularly Sir Robert Wilson, Baron d'Eben, and Captain Arinchild. In the corps to which they were particularly attached, they made considerable progress in organizing and disciplining them. Marshal Soult, who commanded a division of the French army in Galicia, began, in the beginning of March, to march upon Portugal,

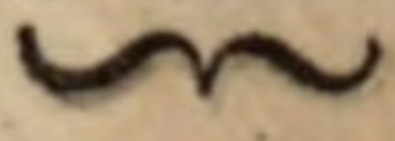
A. D. 1809. to co-operate, as was intended, with another part of that army, which was to have entered by the Alentejo, under Marshal Victor. Soult arrived at the river Minho, which he attempted to cross in boats near its mouth, but a few guns in the old fortress of Caminha effectually prevented him, and he was obliged to go round by the bridge of Orense, which is about forty miles from Tuy, and which he crossed on the 6th of March.

After dispersing the Spanish army under the Marquis Romana, he appeared before Chaves on the 13th. General Silveira, who was in that city, had about 3000 regular troops, and a body of half-armed militia and peasantry, under his command; but this force was altogether inadequate to the defence of that place, so that, on the approach of the enemy, he retired to Villa Pouca. Many of the motley group which composed his army refused to follow his advice, and remained for the purpose of defending Chaves. Soult invested the place, and it surrendered on the 15th without having fired a shot.

From Chaves Soult proceeded to Braga, whither General Freire, the commander-in-chief in the north, had retired with the Portuguese army. Braga offered nothing favourable for defence, and the known approach of the enemy threw the inhabitants into the greatest confusion. The Ge-

neral either was not so active as he ought to have been, or was believed not to be so. The mob surrounded his house, and demanded to be led out against the enemy ; and, on his refusing, the fury of the people became ungovernable ; they forced their way through his guards, and the General and his Aid-de-camp were put to death upon the spot. Baron d'Eben, the only British officer at that time in Braga, was in a manner compelled by this tumultuous army to become its leader. He advanced at their head to Carvalho de Este, a strong position some leagues from the city, and, for three successive days, foiled every attempt of Soult to dislodge him. On the 19th Soult's artillery forced this pass, and the Baron, with the troops that could be kept together, retired upon Oporto. Soult proceeded in this direction also, and arrived before that city on the 25th. On the 26th he reconnoitred the works, and, notwithstanding he attacked them with the whole of his force on the 27th and 28th, he was uniformly repulsed ; and had it not been for the confusion induced by a want of confidence in the officers who commanded in Oporto, it is more than probable that he would not have been able to take it. On the 29th the French army entered Oporto, and, upon the pretext that a French officer had been killed when sent with a flag of truce to summon

A. D. 1809.

 A.D. 1809. the city, many thousands of the inhabitants were put to the sword. Neither age nor sex were spared, and for three days the streets were covered with the dead bodies of the murdered inhabitants.

When Soult advanced upon Oporto, he left about 1300 men, including sick, at Chaves, and no sooner was General Silveira assured of his having passed Braga, than he hastened from Villa Pouca, and appeared before that place. The French quitted the town, and advanced to meet his army,—but numbers overcame discipline; about six hundred of them were killed or wounded, and the remainder were taken prisoners. After this gallant atchievement, he continued to harass the rear of Soult's army, until it got possession of Oporto.

Soult was marching upon that city when Marshal Beresford arrived in Lisbon; and when it fell, his Excellency communicated the disaster to his army in general orders. "Oporto," he told them, "though defended by four and twenty thousand men, and protected with trenches and redoubts mounted with more than two hundred pieces of artillery, had fallen an easy prey to an army not more than half the number of its garrison. The people and the troops," he continued, "were brave and loyal, but, under the appear-

ance of patriotism, the enemy were able to pro-^{A.D. 1809.}
duce a general insubordination, and the city was
lost.—Let the troops,” says Marshal Beresford, in
the general order from which I quote, “be subor-
dinate to their officers. Let them observe strict
discipline, and the country has nothing to fear.
The enemy is in possession of Oporto,—he was
also in possession of Chaves, but that place he has
lost, with more than fifteen hundred men. When
General Silveira retired from Chaves, which,
from the nature and number of his forces, he was
incapable of defending, there were pretended pa-
triotists who raised a cry of treason against him;
but the firmness of the General saved the greater
part of his army, and placed it in a situation to
acquire greater glory, and merit the thanks of
the country. The commander-in-chief,” he con-
cludes, “feels it his duty to warn the inhabitants
and the troops against those who, while they as-
sume the appearance of patriotism, are in reality
leaders of sedition; nor can he sufficiently re-
commend union and confidence, as every thing
may be expected from the loyalty, valour, and
patriotism, which animate the Portuguese in the
defence of their country.”

The news of the Austrian war tended much to
raise the drooping spirits of the Portuguese, and
when the Marquis of Wellington landed at Lis-

A.D. 1809. bon, on the 22d of April, every town and village not in the possession of the enemy was illuminated. This officer (then Sir Arthur Wellesley) had gained the entire confidence of the Portuguese, during his short but glorious campaign of 1808. The Prince Regent conferred upon him the rank of Marshal-general of the kingdom, and the nation hailed him as their deliverer from bondage.

Previous to Lord Wellington's arrival, the British army under Sir John Craddock, and the Portuguese under Marshal Beresford, had taken the field. On the 30th *, his Lordship joined them at Coimbra; he reviewed the whole on the Campo de Bologna, near that city, on the 6th, and immediately began his march upon Oporto. Marshal Beresford, with about 6000 Portuguese, and a brigade of British infantry, proceeded toward Vizeu, to act upon the enemy's left. Colonel (now Brigadier-general) Trant, who was governor of Coimbra, was placed, with the Portuguese under his command, on the Vouga, and his advanced guard occupied the right bank of that river, on the road to Oporto; two divisions of the British infantry, with the cavalry, proceeded by the high road

* Sir John Craddock had given up the command of the army before Lord Wellington joined it.

from Coimbra; and the third division, under General Hill, by Aveiro. The army moved forward on the 7th of May, but halted on the 8th, that Marshal Beresford's division might have time to arrive upon the Upper Douro. On the 9th the commander-in-chief learnt that four regiments of French cavalry, and a battalion of infantry, with some pieces of artillery, were cantoned in the town of Albergaria Nova, and the neighbouring villages. Some of the troops crossed the Vouga that evening, and others in the course of the night, with a view to surprise this advanced post of the enemy; but, though they advanced as silently as possible in utter darkness, and along rocky defiles, where it was often necessary to pass in single files, they found the enemy, about sunrise, upon the alert, and the attempt at surprising them failed. Our cavalry charged and drove them from their position, and two regiments of Portuguese infantry drove them through a pine-grove which was in their rear. In this affair the French lost their cannon, and a considerable number of wounded; on the 11th their out-posts were driven in between Souto Rodondo and Grijo, and Soult's advanced guard, consisting of 4000 infantry and some squadrons of cavalry, was driven from a very strong position on the heights above Grijo, when it retreated across the Douro.

A. D. 1809.

A.D. 1809. In this retreat they were closely pursued by the allied army. The Buffs were ferried across the Douro in two small boats, and though attacked by the whole French army, they kept their ground most gallantly, till they were supported by the 48th and 66th British, and 16th Portuguese regiments. General Sherbrooke took advantage of the weakness of the enemy in the city, and crossed with his division at Villa Nova. General Murray also effected a passage at Avintas, and came down upon Soult's left, which obliged him to retreat in the direction of Amarante. This retreat, or rather flight, took place about five o'clock in the evening, and our army pursued as long as they could see. Oporto hailed its deliverer with every demonstration of joy, and Lord Wellington had the pleasure of sitting down to an excellent dinner which had been prepared for Marshal Soult.

It was Soult's intention, if defeated, to retreat by Amarante, through Villa Real and Braganza; but Marshal Beresford had moved on with such rapidity, that having compelled the French posts of Villa Real and Mezamfrio to fall back with some loss, he drove in Loison's out-posts at the bridge of Amarante, and acquired possession of that important point at the same moment that Soult was defeated before Oporto. Soult was

therefore obliged to pass through the mountains ^{A. D. 1809.} by roads impracticable for carriages, and to cross the Minho once more at Orense. Lord Wellington pursued as far as Montalegre, and then halted, finding it impossible either to stop or overtake him.

During these movements in the north of Portugal, Marshal Victor quitted the banks of the Guadiana, and driving Sir Robert Wilson's legion and the Portuguese militia from Alcantara, he entered Portugal, and advanced a little way in the direction of Castello Branco. Lord Wellington, who had foreseen the possibility of such a movement, marched immediately to the south; but Victor, whose only object was to make a diversion in favour of Soult, retreated as soon as he heard that the allied army had re-crossed the Douro, and concentrated his army between the Tagus and Guadiana, in the neighbourhood of Caçeres. Marshal Beresford, with the Portuguese troops, was directed to watch the motions of the enemy in the north of Spain, while the commander-in-chief, after collecting the army at Abrantes, and equipping it for a summer campaign, proceeded to Placentia, for the purpose of joining the army of General Cuesta in its operations against Victor. On the 17th and 18th of July, the British army broke up from Placentia,

A. D. 1809. and joined the Spanish army under Cuesta at Oropesa on the 20th. On the 22d the combined armies marched from Oropesa, and the advanced guard attacked the rear-guard of Victor's army, upon a plain about a league from Talavera de la Reyna. Victor retreated to a position upon the Alberche, a league beyond Talavera, and our army encamped for the night in the vineyards and olive-groves between the French and the town. Lord Wellington determined to attack the enemy on the 23d, but Cuesta insisted upon delaying the attack till the following day. Victor, profiting by the precious time that had been unexpectedly given him, was found, on the morning of the 24th, to have decamped. He retired to Sta Ollala, and from thence to Torrijas. The British troops were halted from absolute necessity, as from the moment of its entrance into Spain it had been ill supplied, the means of transport had been refused, and now that it was joined with a force still more numerous than itself, there was a very great want of every necessary.

CUESTA, who believed the French army was in full retreat, did not seem to value his British allies as he ought. He had advanced to Sta Ollala and Torrijas, but on the 26th his outposts were attacked at the latter place, and driven in, and the whole of his army would have been destroy-

ed, if the troops under the Duke of Albuquerque ^{A. D. 1809.} had not displayed unusual bravery. The Spanish army retreated twenty miles from Sta Ollala that evening, and again joined the British army.

On the 25th Victor was joined by Joseph Bonaparte, with the troops from Madrid, as also by the corps under General Sebastiani; and on the 26th he began to advance from Toledo, whither he had retreated, for the purpose of effecting their junction. As soon as the Spaniards fell back on the Alberche, and the enemy was known to advance, a general action was apprehended by the British commander-in-chief. General Sherbrooke was recalled with his division from Casalegos, to his station in the line; and a position, extending to about two miles in length, was taken up on the right of Talavera. The Spanish army had the right, and the British the left of the line. General M'Kenzie's division of British infantry formed the advanced guard, which was stationed in a wood on the right of the Alberche, near the village of Casa de Salinas. A squadron of the 2d light dragoons of the King's German Legion, was in advance of General M'Kenzie. About two o'clock in the afternoon of the 27th the enemy appeared on the left bank of the Alberche, which he immediately forded; and before General M'Kenzie's troops could be withdrawn, they

A. D. 1809. were attacked by a very superior force. They suffered severely, but retired in perfect order, and took their position in the line. The enemy continued to advance, and in the course of the afternoon, the whole of his force, amounting to more than 42,000, appeared in front of the allied army. A cannonade was commenced on the left of the British position, and the cavalry made an attempt to penetrate the Spanish lines, in the direction of Talavera, but without success. Soon after night had closed, an attempt was made to get possession of a height, which was on the left of the British position, and which commanded the whole of the line, and upon which a part of General Hill's division was posted. The attack upon this hill was made by volunteers from the French army, and directed by General Ruffin, who was supported by General Vilatte, and for a moment it proved successful. But General Hill, at the head of a column of his division, soon drove them from that post. They attempted it a second time about the middle of the night, but in vain. Firing continued during the whole night in different parts of the lines, and at day-break, three regiments formed in close column, under General Ruffin, made a third attempt. They had almost reached the summit of the hill, so well contested during the night, when they were charged, and driven

back at the point of the bayonet. They retired, ^{A.D. 1809.} however, in good order, and the Commander-in-chief judged it necessary to move two brigades of cavalry into the valley on the left, for the farther security of that post. Our cavalry were supported in this movement by the Spanish horse, under the Duke d'Albuquerque; and the French riflemen, who were placed on the heights to annoy them, were dislodged by the fifth division of Spanish infantry. The enemy kept up their attacks upon the British line till about mid-day, when having gained no advantage, they retired a little, and cooked their dinners. During this period, a little wine and bread was served out to the British troops. About one o'clock, Victor ordered a general attack along the line. His own three corps were to attack the hill which had been so well defended by General Hill's division. Sebastiani was to form his division into two lines on the left of La Pisse. Leval, with his brigade, was placed on the left of Sebastiani. Milhaud's cavalry were to observe Talavera, and Latour Maubourg's division of infantry, and Merlin's division of cavalry, were formed in the rear to support Victor's corps. The reserve was placed in a third line, behind Sebastiani's corps.

The general attack began by the march of several columns of infantry into the valley, for the

A. D. 1809. purpose of attacking once more the heights occupied by General Hill. These columns were charged by the German light dragoons, and 23d British dragoons, in which both regiments suffered severely, without being able to break any part of the enemy's columns. They prevented, however, the execution of their plans in that direction. The attack upon the centre of the British position was most gallantly repulsed by General Alexander Campbell's brigade, supported by the Spanish corps of Eguia and Henistrossa, and by a regiment of Spanish cavalry. And Sir John Sherbrook's division repulsed the enemy with the bayonet, from the left and centre of the first line of the British army. In the charge of this division, the brigade of guards which was on the right advanced too far, and was outflanked by one of the enemy's batteries, and by the fire of their retreating columns. It was therefore obliged to retire to its original position. Its retreat was covered by General Cotton's cavalry, and the 1st battalion of the 48th regiment. The coolness and intrepidity of the brave 48th on this occasion, will always be remembered.

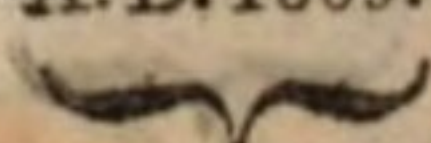
Foiled in every attack, the enemy began towards evening to retreat across the Alberche. They retired from the hard-fought field with great order and regularity, but left about twenty pieces

of cannon, a great quantity of ammunition, and some prisoners, in our possession. Their loss was calculated at ten thousand men. Generals La Pisse and Morlet were killed, and Sebastiani and Boulet wounded. A. D. 1809.

The British loss was, two Generals, M'Kenzie and Langworth, killed, three wounded; thirty-two officers, and 765 non-commissioned and privates, killed; and 193 officers, and 3700 non-commissioned officers and privates, wounded; six officers, twenty-four serjeants, and 418 rank and file, were returned missing. The enemy continued on the heights on the left of the Alberche for two days, but his rear-guard was withdrawn during the night of the 1st of August, and he retired towards Sta Ollala.

The want of provisions and means of transport, which had compelled the commander-in-chief to halt on the 24th at Talavera, prevented him from following up the victory which had been so gloriously won; and although General Crawford's division joined on the 29th, the army was never able to advance from Talavera.

SOULT, after his flight from Portugal, and retreat from Galicia, occupied Zamora and Salamanca with what remained of his army. Astorga and Benevente were occupied by a corps under Ney, and Mortier's division was quartered at Me-

 A.D. 1809. dina del Campo and Valladolid. As soon as he was apprised of Lord Wellington's movements, Soult collected the whole of these troops at Salamanca. On the 24th of July he received orders from Joseph Bonaparte to march upon Placencia, so as to get into the rear of the British army as speedily as possible. Mortier's corps left Salamanca on the 27th, Soult followed on the 30th, and Ney two days afterwards. Mortier entered Placencia on the 1st of August.

LORD WELLINGTON, on being informed of these movements, determined to march against Soult with the British army, while Cuesta and the Spaniards maintained the post at Talavera; and on the 3d of August the British army marched to Oropesa, with the intention of either compelling Soult to retreat, or giving him battle. At five o'clock in the evening, the Commander-in-chief was informed that the enemy was at Naval Moral, not more than eighteen miles distant, and between the army and the bridge of Almaraz; at the same time he received dispatches from Talavera, inclosing an intercepted letter from Jourdan to Soult, ordering him to bring the British army to action wherever he could find it. But, what was still worse, he was informed that Victor was again advancing; and that Cuesta, seeing himself threatened, both in front and on his

flanks, was determined to march and join the British army. Lord Wellington wrote to Cuesta, urging his remaining with the sick and wounded until they were arrived at the bridge of Archiobispo; but as Cuesta had not asked Lord Wellington's opinion respecting his movements, he did not wait to receive it. He left Talavera before it reached him, and marching all night, joined the British at Oropesa on the morning of the 4th. A.D. 1812.

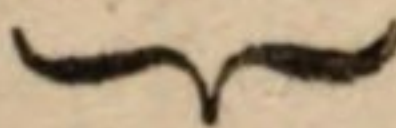
The British army was now exposed both in front and rear, and nothing was left but a speedy retreat by the bridge of Archiobispo, the only one by which they could cross the Tagus. On the day that Cuesta joined, the army retreated by this route, and crossed the Tagus. The Spanish army followed on the evening of the 5th. The British army continued in Spain as long as a mouthful of bread could be procured for the soldiers, or a handful of straw for the horses; and on the 20th it began its retreat in the direction of Badajos, where it went into cantonments in the beginning of September.

During the whole of this busy period, the Portuguese army under Marshal Beresford remained on the frontiers, observing the movements of the enemy in the north of Spain; but as the British army retired upon Badajos, Marshal Beresford

A. D. 1809. withdrew his troops from Spain. The different
brigades and regiments were quartered in the interior of Portugal, and he took advantage of a few months of quiet to recruit his army, and to effect its organization and discipline.

C H A P. IV.

The Present State of the Army of Portugal.

WHEN the Count of Schaumburg Lippe was A. D. 1812.
Marshal-general of the Portuguese army, he was 
of opinion, that the defence of Portugal depend- Regular Force.
ed much more upon the strength of the frontier
garrisons, than the operations of a moveable ar-
my, and he was at great pains to organize a pro-
per artillery-force to defend these garrisons. He
formed four regiments which still exist, as also
several independent companies, which were statio-
nary in their respective forts. In the organization
of this department of the army, he was material-
ly assisted by the French Marshal, Valleré, and
the English Colonel, Ferriar; officers still remem-
bered and respected in Portugal. The first, while
Governor of Elvas, constructed the famous bomb-
proofs, called FORT LE LIPPE; and the second,
while Colonel of the regiment of artillery of Va-
lença, was employed in arranging and forming
the other three regiments, which were then em-
bodied.

A. D. 1812

1st Regt. of
Artillery.

The First Regiment of Artillery, being considered the regiment of the Court, was formed to garrison the castles and forts of Estremadura. The head-quarters were stationary at Lisbon, and its duty was confined to the capital and sea-coasts adjacent.

2d Regt.

In like manner, the Second Regiment, which was formed in Algarve, had its head-quarters at Faro, and was entirely occupied in the defence of the castles and forts in that detached kingdom.

3d Regt.

The Third Regiment of Artillery had its head-quarters at Estremos, and was employed in the garrisons on the frontiers of the Alentejo and Beira Baixa.

4th Regt.

The Fourth Regiment was resident in the forts on the northern frontiers, and had its head-quarters at Oporto.

Besides these regular artillery regiments, there were also, as already observed, Independent, or rather Invalid Artillery Companies, which were always stationary in their several forts; for though the regiments were seldom moved from their districts, they might be moved at pleasure, from fort to fort.

When Marshal Beresford took the command of the army, he ordered detachments from the several regiments to be formed into brigades, and that

these brigades, consisting of one or two com-^{A.D. 1812.}
panies each, should be attached to the several di-
visions of the army. In the first arrangement,
the brigades had only three and six pounders,
twelve of which were considered as forming a
battery. His Excellency has since ordered, that
they should also have light nine-pounders. Those
brigades of flying artillery have been joined to the
British artillery, and are with it dispersed among
the different divisions of the allied army. At Bu-
saco and Albuera, and on every occasion when
they have had an opportunity of coming into ac-
tion, the Portuguese artillery have distinguished
themselves very much, but more particularly dur-
ing the sieges of Cidade Rodrigo and Badajos.

The Portuguese artillery have been organized
upon nearly the same principles as the British, ex-
cept that there is no master-general; each regi-
ment has its Colonel and "Etat Major."

The corps of Royal Engineers, among whom
are many officers of ability and intelligence, is
also similar to the British Royal Engineers. The
whole are under the command of a Marshal de
Campo, who has the commission of "Chief Engi-
neer." At present there are one Brigadier-gene-
ral, eight Colonels, thirteen Lieutenant-colonels,
twenty-seven Majors, twenty-two Captains, eleven
First and eleven Second Lieutenants, belonging
to this corps.

CAVALRY OF THE LINE.

A.D. 1812.

The Regiments of Portuguese Cavalry are twelve in number; and when Marshal Beresford took the command of the army, they were in a very wretched state. His Excellency has bestowed a great deal of attention upon this part of his military force; I do not think, however, that their progress has been equal to that of the Infantry, except in those regiments which have been under the immediate direction of British officers. The difficulty of procuring horses has rendered the extension of this force impossible; nay, several of the regiments remain still dismounted, so that even the whole kingdom of Portugal, at present, cannot mount twelve regiments of cavalry. The regiments which have been organized are in excellent order, and, wherever they have an opportunity of engaging with the enemy, have distinguished themselves*.

When Marshal Beresford set about organizing this force, he appointed the Count de Sampayo, a

* Their late conduct in Spain under General D'Urban would seem to contradict this assertion; but it ought to be recollected, that the same regiments who turned their backs in the affair alluded to, behaved nobly at Salamanca.

very distinguished officer, Inspector-general of ^{A.D. 1812.} the cavalry, and those British cavalry officers, who had joined the Prince Regent's service, were distributed among the different regiments. A few rules and regulations, similar to the British cavalry regulations, were drawn up and printed by order of his Excellency, for the guidance of the officers of this service; and the organized regiments are now, in every respect, similar to the British cavalry, and manœuvre upon the same principles.

In Count Lippe's regulations for the cavalry, the regiments are formed upon a very low scale. Each troop was to consist of only three officers, five non-commissioned officers, a trumpeter, a farrier, and thirty men: and as a regiment consisted of only eight troops, the effective strength of each corps was not more than thirty officers and non-commissioned officers, and 240 men. This establishment has been increased at different periods, and when the whole were reduced in 1808, the effective strength of each regiment was 470. This establishment was further increased by Marshal Beresford to 520, and I believe the whole are very complete in men. The Portuguese, however, are not calculated to excel in this species of service. The men are too indolent to attend to their horses, and the country certainly

A.D. 1812. does not produce forage or horses for any great number of cavalry. Gomes Freire de Andrade, whose book is by far the best which I have seen on the formation of an army for the defence of Portugal, though he admits the necessity of a considerable cavalry force, does not propose to form more than eleven regiments of native troops, of about 500 rank and file each.

1st Regt. of
Cavalry.

The First Regiment of Cavalry was formerly known in the Portuguese army by the name of the Alcantara Dragoons, from its being a Lisbon regiment, and almost always quartered in the barracks of Alcantara. It is at present commanded by Colonel Christovão da Costa Ataide, and is in a very effective state.

The First and Seventh Cavalry were formed into a brigade, and the command of it given to Mr Seddan, a gentleman who had formerly been an officer of dragoons in this country, and who was sent out to Portugal with the rank of Brigadier-general. He certainly bestowed a great deal of pains in the organization of this brigade, while he remained in the country; but he quitted the service of the Prince Regent before his brigade was completed. This brigade, under the command of Colonel Otway, late of the Eighteenth British Light Dragoons, distinguished itself very much

in several affairs with the French cavalry, near ^{A.D. 1812.} Badajos, last year ; and particularly the First Regiment, which happened to be principally engaged. The First and Seventh are attached to the Light Cavalry division of the British army.

The Second, or Moura Regiment of Cavalry, ^{2d Regt.} being dismounted, is not in such order as the First Regiment, and has never been able to take the field with the allied army.

The Third, or Olivença Regiment, is also ^{3d Regt.} incomplete, and therefore not able to take the field with the army.

The Fourth, however, or Regiment of Meck-^{4th Regt.} lemburg, was amongst the first regiments able to take the field. The command of this corps was given to Lieutenant-colonel Campbell, late of his Majesty's Seventh Light Dragoons. It was recruited in Lisbon ; and by the exertions of this officer, it was capable of joining the army very early in 1810. The Fourth and Tenth are brigaded together, and were also under the orders of Colonel Otway. But as this officer has quitted the service of the Prince Regent, the cavalry division is at present commanded by Brigadier-general D'Urban.

A. D. 1812.

5th Regt.

The Fifth, or Evora Regiment, having been given to Lieutenant-colonel John Brown, late of his Majesty's Sixth Regiment of Dragoons, was soon completed, and able to take the field. The Fifth and Eighth form a brigade, which till lately was employed with the Spanish army in the Estremaduras. This brigade is commanded by Brigadier-general Maddon, who, on account of his distinguished services in the Peninsula, was lately restored to his rank of Lieutenant-colonel in the British service. Colonel Brown has been removed to the command of the recruiting depot. The Fifth Regiment of Cavalry is at present commanded by Major Antonio Carlos Cayre.

6th Regt.

The Sixth, or Bragança Regiment, was for some time very actively employed in the North of Portugal; but being very incomplete in horses, it was ordered to Lisbon to recruit in the beginning of 1810. It is now commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Richard Diggins, of the 11th Light Dragoons, and is in very excellent order.

7th Regt.

The Seventh, or Proper Lisbon Regiment, is certainly one of the most complete regiments in the service, and is in a very excellent state of discipline. It is at present commanded by Colonel

Alvaro Xavier da Fonseca, but owes its high state ^{A. D. 1812.}
of discipline to Lieutenant-colonel Watson.

The Eighth, another very complete corps, was ^{8th Regt.}
formerly known as the Regiment of Elvas. In
an affair near Badajos, when the whole of the
army of the late Marquis Romana was cut off by
the French, this regiment, led on by Colo-
nel Brown, behaved most nobly, and cut its
way through the columns of the enemy. It is
commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Antonio de
Silva Maldonado, and, as already observed, is bri-
gaded with the Fifth Regiment.

The Ninth, or Regiment of Chaves, was kept ^{9th Regt.}
on the northern frontiers, till the spring of 1810;
when, with the other corps composing the bri-
gade of the north, viz. the Sixth and Twelfth,
it was sent to Lisbon to be organized. Being,
however, very complete in men, but very defi-
cient in horses, it was dismounted, and sent to
Abrantes to do garrison duty. It has never taken
the field with the allied army, and still remains
dismounted.

The Tenth, or Santarem Regiment, has been ^{10th Regt.}
completely formed since Marshal Beresford took
the command of the army; and considering that

A.D. 1812. it is wholly composed of young recruits, and has been almost constantly on the move since the spring of 1810, it is in most excellent order. This regiment having been brigaded with, and always quartered near the Fourth, owes its present excellent state to the instructions of Lieutenant-colonel Campbell, and the zeal and activity of its commanding officer, the Viscount Barbaçena.

11th Regt. The Eleventh, or Almeida Regiment, though not complete in horses, has been a good deal employed in the Upper Beira, and in the frontiers, with the army of General Bacellar. It has behaved with great gallantry on many occasions, and its character in the army is very high. This Regiment is commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Domingos Bernardino Ferreira.

12th Regt. The Twelfth, or Miranda Regiment, was sent dismounted to Lisbon in 1810, where it has been recruited, and put into good order. It is commanded by Colonel Amaro Vicente de Souza.

INFANTRY OF THE LINE.

THE directions for the drill and exercise of the Portuguese infantry, as ordered by Lippe in his Regulamento, were superseded by instructions

printed in 1810 by order of Marshal Beresford ; ^{A. D. 1812.}
and as these instructions are uniformly followed
by the Portuguese army, I shall only observe on
this part of the subject, before I proceed to give
a short account of the present state of each par-
ticular regiment, that the Portuguese army being
obliged to take the field, almost as soon as Mar-
shal Beresford was appointed Commander-in-Chief,
little or no improvement was made, either in the
drill or government of the troops, for the first six
months. As soon, however, as they could return
to winter-quarters, after the campaign of 1809,
the different brigades were stationed in the seve-
ral districts from which they were to draw their
recruits, and the business of drilling and forming
the corps was set about in real earnest. The Bri-
tish officers who had already joined the Portu-
guese service, were distributed among the regi-
ments and brigades by Marshal Beresford, with
great judgement ; and while his Excellency fixed
his head-quarters at Lisbon for three months, and
began to reform various abuses which had long
existed in the army, the formation and drill of the
whole went on with great regularity. Major-ge-
neral John Hamilton, an old and distinguished
officer, was sent out from England to take the im-
mediate superintendence of the drill and exercise
of the troops. He was appointed Inspector-ge-

A.D. 1812. neral of the Infantry by the Prince Regent, and being active and indefatigable himself, he kept every other officer at his post. A degree of emulation was excited among the different regiments and brigades; the old and unfit officers were either dismissed from the service, or put upon the reformed list, and young men of merit actively promoted; and so diligently were the intentions of the commander-in-chief followed up, that when his Excellency made a tour of the kingdom in the beginning of 1810, he found almost the whole of the troops in a very forward state of discipline. By bestowing praise freely when it was due, and censure when it could not be avoided, Marshal Beresford kept alive the spirit of emulation, and the army took the field in May 1810, in very excellent order. Lord Wellington reviewed several of the brigades at Thomar and Coimbra, on his way to the frontiers; and his Lordship did not hesitate to declare, that he had seldom seen a better-disciplined or finer body of men.

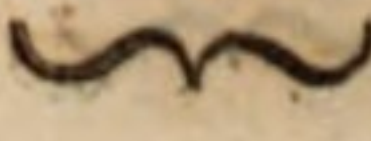
1st Regt. of
Infantry.

The First Regiment of Infantry of the Line was formed under the personal inspection of Count Lippe in 1762, and is still denominated his regiment. This corps was raised in Lisbon, and was always considered as holding a more respectable rank in the general line than any other

regiment; being esteemed, in some measure, the ^{A. D. 1812.} guards of the court, or household troops of the Sovereign. Of late this regiment may have lost somewhat of its dignity, but it has gained considerably in efficiency and discipline. Lieutenant-colonel Hill, who disciplined the corps in 1809, still remains in the command of it. The First Regiment has distinguished itself in several engagements with the enemy during the last three years. It is brigaded with the Sixteenth, another Lisbon regiment; and this brigade, which is commanded by Colonel Dennis Pack*, of his Majesty's Seventy-first Regiment, has been almost always in the advance. During the several attacks on the British position by the French army, on the third, fourth, and fifth of May 1811, Brigadier-general Pack's brigade was entrusted with the investment of Almeida; and it was a picquet of the First Regiment which the French garrison encountered on their evacuation of that place; the whole of which were found next morning transfixed with the bayonets of the enemy, on the very spot they had been placed to defend.

The Second Regiment of Infantry of the Line ^{2d Regt.}

* Colonel Pack has the rank of Brigadier-general in the Portuguese army.

A. D. 1812.  was raised in the small kingdom of Algarve, and embodied at Lagos. It is one of the most efficient corps in the army; being not only complete in point of numbers, but composed of a very fine body of men, and in the best state of discipline. It is at present commanded by Colonel George D'Avilez Zuzarte, but owes its high state of discipline in a great measure to Major Macdonald, of his Majesty's 88th regiment, and the personal attention of General Hamilton, in whose division it is. The Second and Fourteenth Regiments are brigaded together, and form what is called the Algarve Brigade.

The Algarve Brigade is commanded at present by Brigadier-general Antonio Hypolito Costa, a very distinguished Portuguese officer. It is attached to the second division of the British army, and behaved with great gallantry at Albuera.

3d Regt.

The Third, or Olivença Regiment of Infantry of the Line, though in good order, is not so complete as many of the other corps of the army. It has always been a sickly corps, but nevertheless has kept the field, and distinguished itself on various occasions, during the last three years. The Third Regiment is commanded by Colonel John Antonio Tavares, and never was under the command of a British officer; with the Fifteenth

it forms a brigade, which is commanded by Colonel Spry *, of his Majesty's Seventy-seventh Regiment, and which is attached to the fifth division of the British army. A.D. 1812.

The Fourth Regiment of Infantry of the Line, ^{4th Regt.} having been formed and commanded, for a great number of years, by Gomes Freire, said to be one of the most distinguished officers in the service of Portugal, previous to the invasion of that kingdom by the French army, was always esteemed the first corps in the service. General Freire having been prevailed upon to enter the service of France, the greater part of his regiment left the Peninsula with him; so that when Marshal Beresford took the command of the army, this regiment had to be formed entirely *de novo*. Lieutenant-colonel Campbell, late of his Majesty's Seventy-first Regiment, who had been allowed to enter the Prince Regent's service, was appointed Colonel of the Fourth Regiment. He was at great pains to preserve whatever remained of the *esprit de corps*; and being almost the first British officer appointed to the command of a regiment, he had great choice of recruits; so that

* Colonel Spry has the rank of Brigadier-general in the Portuguese army.

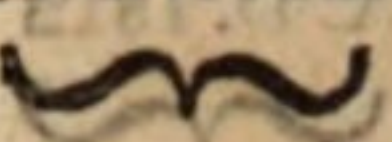
A. D. 1812. the ranks were soon filled up. It is but justice to this distinguished officer to state, that, under his auspices, the new Fourth has continued to be one of the finest corps in the army. It is now commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Campbell, of his Majesty's Seventy-fourth Regiment. The Fourth and Tenth Regiments form a brigade, which is commanded by Colonel, now Brigadier-general Campbell; and is attached to the second division of the British army. Brigadier-general Campbell and this brigade received the thanks of the Commander-in-chief for their conduct at Albuera, where, for the first time, they had an opportunity of engaging with the enemy. They are also particularly mentioned by General Hill, in the surprise and defeat of General Girard's corps at Arroyo del Molino.

5th Regt.

The Fifth, or Elvas Regiment of Infantry of the Line, was for a considerable time stationed with the Seventeenth in the garrison of Elvas, where its discipline was superintended by Captain Carroll, of his Majesty's Eighty-second Regiment, who has the rank of Lieutenant-colonel in the Prince Regent's service. The Fifth is one of the best regiments of the army, and, during the late active operations on the banks of the Guadiana, distinguished itself very particularly. For

some time past this regiment has been command-^{A. D. 1812}
ed by Lieutenant-colonel Muller, of his Majesty's
Royal Regiment. The Fifth Regiment of the
Line and Fifth Battalion of Caçadores formed a
brigade, which was commanded by the gallant
Colonel Collins, of his Majesty's Eighty-third Re-
giment, who, in leading on his men at the battle
of Albuera, had his right leg carried off by a can-
non-ball. The Fifth and Seventeenth Regiments
of the Line, and Eleventh Battalion of Caçadores,
form a brigade, which is commanded by Colonel
Power, of the Thirty-second Regiment, who has
the rank of Brigadier-General in Portugal.

The Sixth Regiment of Infantry of the Line,^{6th Regt.}
or, as it was formerly called, the First Oporto
Regiment, is another distinguished corps. This
regiment was first formed and disciplined by Co-
lonel, now Brigadier-general Harvey, (Lieute-
nant-colonel of his Majesty's Seventy-ninth Re-
giment), and has had the good fortune to be
commanded by a succession of British officers.
When Brigadier-general Harvey was promoted to
the command of a brigade, Colonel Ashworth
got the command of the Sixth; and when Colo-
nel Ashworth rose to the command of the bri-
gade, the immediate command of the regiment

A.D.1812. devolved upon Lieutenant-colonel Grant, (Major
 in his Majesty's Forty-second Regiment).

The Sixth and Eighteenth Regiments, together with the Sixth Battalion of Caçadores, form a brigade, which, on Marshal Beresford's taking the command of the army, was given to the late Colonel William Howe Campbell, of his Majesty's Thirty-first Regiment, who had been permitted to join the service of the Prince Regent, with the rank of Brigadier-general. This distinguished officer fell a sacrifice to the disease of the country at a very early period of life; and it is due to his memory to state, that he appeared to have given his whole soul and mind to the service in which he was engaged. His anxiety and his zeal continued to the last, and he seemed to have equally at heart the good of the service into which he had entered, and the honour of the country of which he was a subject. Few men lived more respected, and no man died more regretted. He possessed the happy art of rendering duty pleasant, and he was an universal favourite with the Portuguese. At General Campbell's death, Colonel Ashworth was promoted to the command of the brigade. This brigade is not attached to any division of the British army. At the defeat of Girard's corps, this brigade acted a very distin-

guished part, and Colonel Ashworth, as well as ^{A.D. 1812.} the Commandants of corps, received the particular thanks of General Sir Rowland Hill.

The Seventh Regiment of Infantry of the Line ^{7th Regt.} is also a very distinguished corps, and composed of a fine body of men from the town and neighbourhood of St. Ubes. The superintendence of the discipline of the Seventh Regiment was entrusted to Lieutenant-colonel M'Creagh, late of his Majesty's Royal Regiment, early in 1809; and with the Nineteenth, or Cascaes Regiment, it formed a brigade, which was commanded for some time by Major-general Blunt, of his Majesty's Third Regiment, or Buffs. The Seventh and Nineteenth Regiments of the Line, and the Second Battalion of the Caçadores, form a brigade, which was attached to the seventh division of the army, and commanded for some time by the late Brigadier-general Colman. The Seventh Regiment is at present commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Francisco Xavier Calheiros.

The Eighth Regiment of Infantry of the Line ^{8th Regt.} was in such a wretched state when Marshal Beresford took the command of the army, that he ordered the few men which belonged to it to be drafted into other corps, so that it had no share

A.D. 1812. in the campaign of 1809. It was, however, very quickly recruited, and the command having been given to Lieutenant-colonel Douglas, late of his Majesty's Forty-fifth Regiment, it was soon able to take its station in the field. At Busaco, this corps, composed almost entirely of young boys who had not been embodied for more than six months, charged the veteran troops of France in a most gallant manner, and put them to the rout. At present, the Eighth and Twelfth Regiments of the Line, and Ninth Battalion of Caçadores, form a brigade, which is attached to the sixth division of the British army, and commanded by Brigadier-general the Conde de Resende.

9th Regt. The Ninth, or Vianna Regiment of Infantry of the Line, has suffered much from sickness, and was therefore, for some time, not so effective as many of the other corps. It is, however, in excellent order, and bore a very distinguished part in the battle of Busaco. The Ninth Regiment was disciplined, and has always been commanded, by Lieutenant-colonel Sutton, of his Majesty's Twenty-third Regiment. It is brigaded with the Twenty-first, and for some time past this brigade has been commanded by Brigadier-general Champalimaud, a most intelligent Portuguese officer, who was severely wounded at Busaco, while leading on his

men to the charge. The Ninth and Twenty-first A. D. 1812. Regiments are attached to the third division of the British army.

The Tenth Regiment has been always known 10th Regt. in the army as the proper Lisbon Regiment. It is not composed of so fine a body of men as the Fourth, with which it is brigaded, but it has always been kept in equally good order.

The Tenth was disciplined, and in a great measure commanded, by the late Lieutenant-colonel Oliver, of his Majesty's Fourth, or King's own Regiment. This gallant young officer received a mortal wound in the trenches before Badajos, and after lingering for several days in the greatest agony, he died, regretted as a man, and respected as a brave and accomplished officer. This regiment is now commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Jose Mauricio Rodrigues.

The Eleventh, or Penamacor Regiment of In- 11th Regt. fantry, though for a considerable time rather in the back-ground, is now, through the exertions of the late Lieutenant-colonel M'Donnell of the Ninety-first Regiment, one of the finest corps of the army, and in the very best state of discipline. This regiment, with the Twenty-third, forms Brigadier-general Harvey's brigade, which first

A.D. 1812. distinguished itself in an attack made upon the village of Sobral, by a strong column of the French army, in October 1810; and which also repelled a charge of the enemy's cavalry, while marching in line on the plains of Albuera. No troops in the world could behave with greater firmness than this brigade. The light company of the Eleventh Regiment, under the command of Captain Waldron, distinguished itself also very particularly in the engagement with the rear-guard of the French army at Redinha, in March 1811; and its gallant conduct at the storming of Badajos will be long remembered. The Eleventh Regiment is now commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Anderson, (Captain in his Majesty's Forty-second Regiment).

The Eleventh and Twenty-third Regiments are attached to the third division of the British army.

12th Regt. The Twelfth, or Chaves Regiment of Infantry, is composed of a very fine body of men, but was not in a state to take the field till late in 1810. It was not recruited so early as most of the other corps, and it is one of those regiments which have never been commanded by a British officer. During the last two years, however, it has been brigaded with the Eighth Regiment, and has been constantly in the field. This regiment is at pre-

sent commanded by Colonel Antonio de Lacerda A. D. 1812.
Pinto. 

The Thirteenth, or Peniche Regiment of In- 13th Regt.
fantry of the Line, was commanded for two years
by Colonel, now Brigadier-general Lobo, Gover-
nor of Abrantes, a steady patriot, and most dis-
tinguished officer. When General Lobo was ap-
pointed Governor of Abrantes, he was allowed to
take his regiment with him, where, being shut
up within the walls of a garrison, and obliged to
labour almost incessantly in the fortifications, it
could not be supposed to acquire or maintain that
high state of discipline and organization, observ-
able in most of the other corps. It is, however,
composed of a very fine body of men; and when
the command devolved on Lieutenant-colonel
Don Joaquim de Camara, a most distinguished
young officer, it was soon equal, in point of dis-
cipline and organization, to any other corps in the
service.

The Thirteenth and Twenty-fourth Regiments
of the Line, and Fifth Battalion of Caçadores,
form a brigade, which is commanded by Briga-
dier-general Bradford, Lieutenant-colonel of his
Majesty's Eleventh Regiment.

The Fourteenth Regiment of Infantry of the 14th Regt.

A. D. 1812.  Line was embodied at Tavira, in Algarve, and is, I believe, taking it altogether, the finest regiment in the service. When I saw this regiment at Chamusca, in February 1811, it mustered about two thousand five hundred men upon parade. The Fourteenth was commanded, and altogether disciplined, by Lieutenant-colonel Le Mesurier, late of his Majesty's Twenty-first Regiment, who is at present governor of the town of Almeida. I have already observed that this regiment forms, with the Second, what is called the Algarve Brigade. The inhabitants of Algarve appear to be a much stronger and healthier race of men than the generality of the Portuguese. They resemble, in some respects, the Spanish Andalusians, and are allowed to make very good soldiers. The Fourteenth Regiment is at present under the command of Colonel Alexander Magno d'Oliveiro.

15th Regt.

The Fifteenth Regiment is called the Second Regiment of Olivença. I believe this regiment has suffered more from sickness than almost any other corps. It was so much reduced in June 1811, that Marshal Beresford was obliged to order a second battalion to be recruited at Oporto. The Fifteenth Regiment was disciplined, and till lately commanded, by Colonel M'Mahon, of his

Majesty's Seventeenth Regiment. I have already ^{A. D. 1812.} observed that it is brigaded with the Third, or First Olivença Regiment of Infantry. It is now commanded by Colonel Luis de Rego Barreto, a most distinguished officer, who is often mentioned in the history of the campaigns of the last three years.

The Sixteenth, or Regiment of Viera Telles, is ^{16th Regt.} a corps much celebrated in the annals of the Portuguese army. It is one of those which were sent to France during the reign of General Junot; yet it was one of those first organized after the expulsion of that General. This regiment was warmly engaged with Soult's army at Oporto, and received the particular thanks of Lord Wellington (then Sir Arthur Wellesley) for its gallant conduct. During the last three years, the Sixteenth Regiment has been almost always engaged in skirmishes with the enemy, and on every occasion has behaved well. It was formed and disciplined by Lieutenant-colonel Doyle, late of his Majesty's eighty-seventh Regiment; at present it is commanded by Colonel Neil Campbell, of his Majesty's Fifty-fourth Regiment. When the Sixteenth Regiment was on its march from Lisbon to Oporto, in May 1809, five hundred journeymen shoe-makers left Lisbon in a body, and joined its ranks as volunteers, near Leiria.

A. D. 1812.

The Sixteenth, as already observed, is brigaded with the First Regiment.

17th Regt.

The Seventeenth, or Second Elvas Regiment of Infantry, suffered most severely before Badajoz, during the spring and summer of 1811. This corps, which was considered as one of the garrison regiments of Elvas, was never opposed to the enemy in the field, till the investment of Badajoz took place, in April 1811. In the different actions, however, in which it was engaged, it behaved most nobly. It is commanded by Colonel Turner, of his Majesty's Royal West India Rangers; but was formed, and in a great measure disciplined, by the late Major M'Geachy, of his Majesty's Eleventh Regiment.

When Lord Wellington judged it proper to attempt taking St Christoval by storm, on the evening of the 9th of June 1811, Major M'Geachy most gallantly volunteered his services to lead on the party. Though annoyed by a galling and destructive fire from the fort, the chosen band pushed on boldly to the breach, which was found neither so practicable as had been conceived, nor so feebly defended. After a brave but ineffectual struggle to gain the fort, our troops were obliged to retire from the trenches. Major M'Geachy had gained the summit of the breach, when, by

the bursting of a shell, he was completely cut in ^{A.D. 1812.} two, and fell lifeless into the trench below. He was a brave and intelligent officer, sincerely attached to the profession of arms, and most strict and attentive to the duties of his situation.

The Eighteenth, or Second Oporto Regiment, ^{18th Regt.} is most certainly one of the finest regiments in the service, both as an effective corps, and as being composed of a fine body of men. Although it never was commanded by a British officer, it certainly, in point of discipline, is equal to any regiment in the country, and superior to many. Colonel Pamplona, however, is one of the few native officers who was not ashamed of his ignorance in the first instance, and who has laboured indefatigably in the formation of his corps. The late General Campbell was also very fond of the Eighteenth, and was at infinite pains to instruct Colonel Pamplona in his duty, and to bring his regiment forward. There was an emulation kept up betwixt this regiment and the Sixth, which, as I have observed, had the advantage of being commanded by some of the best officers of the British army.

The Nineteenth, or Cascaes Regiment, is a fine ^{19th Regt.} corps. It was disciplined and commanded, till

A. D. 1812. very lately, by Lieutenant-colonel M'Bean, late of his Majesty's Sixth Regiment. Five companies of this corps, led on by Colonel M'Bean, at the battle of Busaco, behaved most gallantly, and are particularly mentioned by his Excellency the Commander-in-chief. It is now commanded by Colonel Doyle; and, during the siege of Badajos in 1811, the flank companies of this regiment were particularly distinguished in the attacks upon Fort St Christoval.

20th Regt. The Twentieth, or Campo Maior Regiment, was sent with the British troops to Cadiz last year, and has continued in that garrison ever since. A detachment of this corps, under the command of the late Lieutenant-colonel Bush, accompanied the British army to the heights of Barrosa, and, by their gallant conduct, evinced to the enemies of their country, that the brave sons of Lusitania can fight as well in a foreign country as on the banks of the Mondego.

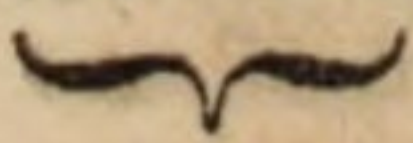
The Twentieth Regiment is not brigaded, as it still remains at Cadiz; at present it is commanded by Lieutenant-colonel John Prior, Captain in the Thirty-ninth Regiment.

21st Regt. The Twenty-first, or Valença Regiment, is not so effective as some of the other regiments; it is,

however, in good order, and was particularly distinguished at the battle of Busaco, where it was commanded by Colonel, now Brigadier-general Champlimaud, a distinguished Portuguese officer, who received a severe wound in leading on his regiment. A. D. 1812.

The Twenty-first, as already observed, is brigaded with the Ninth, and is commanded at present by Lieutenant-colonel Jose Maria d'Araujo Bacellar, but it owes its respectable state of discipline in some measure, if not altogether, to Major St Clair, (Captain in the Royals), who had the charge of the recruiting depot of the regiment at Coimbra, during last winter.

The Twenty-second, or Serpa Regiment, though 22d Regt. composed chiefly of boys, is at present in very excellent order. During the winter of 1810 it lost not less than 500 men, in the garrison of Abrantes, where it was doing duty. It was one of those corps that were drafted on the first formation of the army, and which were not recruited, till after the whole of the other regiments were complete. It was formed at St. Ubes in the beginning of 1810, where it was disciplined by Lieutenant-colonel Watling, of his Majesty's Thirty-ninth Regiment. At present it is com-

A.D. 1812.  manded by Colonel John Buchan, of the Fourth West India Regiment.

23d Regt.

The Twenty-third, or Almeida Regiment, is a very complete and well-organized corps, and is considered as one of the finest regiments in the service. I have already mentioned the gallant conduct of this corps, when speaking of the Eleventh Regiment. The Twenty-third is commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Stubbs, who has the Portuguese rank of Colonel, and who has great merit in bringing his corps to such perfection.

24th Regt.

The Twenty-fourth Regiment was embodied at Bragança ; and when Marshal Beresford took the command of the army, it was given to Colonel Cox. When this officer was appointed governor of Almeida, he was allowed to take his regiment with him. At the fall of Almeida, the Twenty-fourth became prisoners of war with their gallant leader. But the greater part of the corps having escaped from the enemy, Lieutenant-colonel M'Bean was removed from the Nineteenth Regiment, and sent to organize it a second time. This gallant young officer had scarcely time to collect the scattered fragments of the regiment, before the division of General Silveira, to which

it was attached, was attacked by a very superior A. D. 1812. French force under General Claparade. Silveira was obliged to retreat, but not without annoying the enemy considerably. The remains of the Twenty-fourth were several times engaged. They fought like lions, and had several officers killed, and Lieutenant-colonel M'Bean, their leader, dangerously wounded.

The Twenty-fourth, having been appointed to garrison-duty, was not brigaded till last spring, when it joined the Thirteenth Infantry of the Line, and Fifth Caçadores.

LIGHT TROOPS OF THE LINE, OR CAÇADORES.

THE importance of Light Troops in the defence of Portugal having been early ascertained, no time was lost, after Marshal Beresford got the command of the army, in organizing the battalions which had been formed during the revolution, but which were in a very inefficient state at the time the British officers entered the service. From its being a favourite service with the natives, and great pains having been taken with the battalions in the first instance, their gallant conduct is less to be wondered at. The Marquis of Alorna had a corps of light troops, which was called the

A. D. 1812. Legion, previous to the arrival of the French army ; but these were among the number of troops sent to France by Junot. There are now twelve battalions of Caçadores, of 600 men each, well organized, and with the army in the field. Each battalion is commanded by a Lieutenant-colonel, and the effective strength is one Major, six Captains, six Lieutenants, and six Ensigns, with the usual Staff-officers of a British regiment.

1st Batt.

The First Battalion of the present Caçadores was formed at Castello de Vide, by Colonel George d'Avelens, about the month of October 1808 ; and it remained under the command of this distinguished officer for nearly three years, but was disciplined, in a great measure, by Major Algeo, of his Majesty's Thirty-fourth Regiment.

The First Caçadores, with the Third, have always been in advance with the light division of the British army ; and during Massena's retreat from Santarem, this battalion was frequently engaged with the enemy, and had the honour to receive the particular thanks of Lord Wellington, for its gallant conduct. Colonel Avelens has been promoted to the command of the Second Regiment of Infantry, and this battalion is now commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Algeo.

The Second Battalion was embodied at Moura, A. D. 1812. by Colonel Bilston, who now commands the Third Infantry of the Line. It was commanded for some time by Lieutenant-colonel Nixon, of his Majesty's Twenty-eighth Regiment, but was long very far behind the other battalions in point of discipline.

It is attached to the brigade of infantry, composed of the Seventh and Nineteenth Regiments, and at present is commanded by Lieutenant-colonel O'Toole, under whom it has behaved in a most distinguished manner on several occasions.

The Third Battalion was embodied by a brother of the present General Silveira, at Villa Real; but the command of it was given to Lieutenant-colonel Elder, late of his Majesty's Ninety-fifth Regiment, early in 1809. The exertions of this officer have certainly been most successful, as the Third Battalion of Portuguese Caçadores is as fine a body of light troops as exists in any country. At the Coa, at Busaco, and at Redinha, the heroes of this battalion have distinguished themselves against the enemies of their country; and their gallant conduct has been frequently mentioned by the Commander-in-chief. They have always acted with the light division of the British army.

A. D. 1812.


4th Batt.

The Fourth Battalion was embodied at Vizeu, by Colonel Luis do Rego. It is also a very fine corps, and in excellent order. This battalion has been disciplined by Major Williams, of the Eighty-first Regiment, who, since the promotion of Colonel Rego to the Fifteenth Infantry, has commanded the Battalion. It is attached to Brigadier-general Pack's brigade.

5th Batt.

The Fifth was embodied at Campo Maior, by Colonel Mozinho, who now commands the Thirteenth Infantry, and who is brother to the present Adjutant-general. It was first organized by Lieutenant-colonel Stewart, of his Majesty's Third Regiment, or Buffs, and is at present commanded by Lieutenant-colonel M'Creagh, who had the merit of forming the Seventh Infantry of the Line. This battalion is attached to the Thirteenth Brigade of Infantry.

6th Batt.

The Sixth Battalion was formed at Oporto. It is composed of a fine body of men, and was put into excellent order by the late Major White, of his Majesty's Twenty-Seventh Regiment, who, in the prime of life, fell a sacrifice to the malady of the country, at Torres Vedras, in March 1811. This battalion is attached to the Oporto Brigade,

and is at present commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Sebastian Pinto de Araujo. A.D. 1812.

The Seventh Battalion of Caçadores was formerly the First Battalion of the Loyal Lusitanian Legion, (a corps originally formed in England, and for some time commanded by Sir Robert Wilson). It was organized in 1811, and has behaved most gallantly on several occasions; and it has been commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Hawke-shaw, late of the Thirty-first Regiment, since its formation. 7th Batt.

The Eighth Battalion was also formed from the Lusitanian Legion, but was by no means so respectable a corps, in the first instance, as the last mentioned. It was commanded, on its first formation, by the late Major Offley, of the Twenty-third Fuzileers, who was indefatigable in his exertions to bring it to perfection, and who left it as fine a battalion as any in the service. At present it is commanded by Major Hill, under whom it behaved in a most gallant manner at the battle of Salamanca. 8th Batt.

The Ninth Battalion was partly formed from the Lusitanian Legion, and partly recruited at Lamego. It is commanded by Lieutenant-colonel 9th Batt.

A. D. 1812. nel George Brown, complete in every respect, and in excellent order. This Battalion is brigaded with the Eighth and Twelfth Regiments of Infantry.

10th Batt. The Tenth Battalion was formed at Oporto in the summer of 1811, and, by the exertions of Lieutenant-colonel Armstrong, late of the Ninety-seventh Regiment, who commands it, was completed and able to take the field in March last. This Battalion is attached to the Fourth and Tenth Regiments of Infantry.

11th Batt. The Eleventh, another fine battalion, was formed during last year, and has been put into excellent order by Lieutenant-colonel Dursbach, who commands it. These two battalions are for the most part composed of fine healthy lads from the northern provinces, and when they passed through Coimbra in March 1812, were in as fine order as any troops in the world.

12th Batt. The Twelfth Battalion was also formed in the course of last year, and, though not so effective in point of numbers as some of the other battalions, is also in excellent order. At the battle of Salamanca, this battalion took a French Eagle, which Lieutenant-colonel Crookshanks delivered to General

Pack on the field of battle. It is attached to ^{A. D. 1812,}
the First and Sixteenth Regiments of Infantry.

IRREGULAR FORCE.

THE irregular force of Portugal is composed of the Militia and Ordenanza. The first is formed of the farmers and inhabitants of the country, of every class and description, capable of bearing arms in the field, and who can be removed from their districts with the least inconvenience to agriculture or trade; while the last comprehends every male vassal, who has reached the years of manhood, and is not a member of the church, the regular army, or the militia.

At present there are forty-eight regiments of Militia. Militia in existence; which, like the regular army, are divided into three grand divisions. Don Miguel Pereira Forjaz, the Inspector-general of this force, has published a code of regulations, which is very complete; and under the management of his Excellency, the different regiments are kept in a very efficient state, and many of them would bear a comparison with the troops of the line. During the two last years they have often been engaged with the enemy. At the be-

A.D. 1812. ginning of the campaign, they certainly did not behave so well as was expected; they wanted that organization and discipline which gives confidence to the soldier. Of late, however, they have improved very much in this respect; and their gallant conduct, under Brigadier-general Trant, in the retaking of Coimbra, will be long remembered.

Ordenanza. The Ordenanzas, or Armed Peasantry, I have already observed, include the whole male population of the country, which is not connected with the church, the regular army, or the militia. This description of force is governed by laws peculiar to itself, and which have not been altered for a century.

In every city, town, or village, where the lord of the manor resides upon the spot, he, by virtue of his rank in life, is Captain-major of the armed inhabitants, or Ordenanza, of that city, town, or village: and should the lord of the manor not reside upon his property, the chief magistrate of the city, town, or village, is obliged to act as Captain-major, until the King shall appoint some person. The first duty of this officer is, to number the male inhabitants of his district, and to divide the whole into companies of 250 men each. As soon as the companies are numbered, the chief

magistrates of the district are obliged to meet the Captain-major in the public hall of the city, town, or village which forms the district, and there elect the Captains who are to command the companies, as also an officer with the rank of Major, who is styled "Sargento Mor," and whose duty it is to superintend the organization of the different companies under the Captain-major, and to command the district in the absence of that officer. The Captains of companies appoint their own subaltern officers, subject to the approval of the Captain-major.

Before any Captain-major can act as such, he is obliged to take an oath before the Corregidor of the commarca, (a civil magistrate similar to the high sheriff of a county in England), that as he has been elected by his Sovereign, Captain-major of the district, and of the people which have been armed by his Majesty for the defence of the same, that he will always have the inhabitants of the said district ready for the service of his Majesty, and prepared to defend that district, city, town, or village. He is obliged to swear also, that he will at all times obey the orders of his Prince, respect the laws of his country, and assist their execution, and that, with the people of his district, he will defend it, or make war in whatever manner the Sovereign may direct; and

A. D. 1812. that he never will employ the said inhabitants, either together, or any part of them, in any particular service of his own, nor in the service of any of his relations, and that they shall only be commanded by him for the service of the King, and to guard, fulfil, and obey, whatever instructions or orders he may receive from the Sovereign.

The Captains of companies, on being elected, have also to make oath before the Captain-major, that they will always have the company under their command ready for the service of the King, and for the defence of the city, town, or village, to which it belongs; as also, that they will obey the laws, and that they will not employ the people in their own private affairs.

Every person above sixty years of age is excused from serving in the companies of Ordenanza, provided the Captain-major thinks he is unable to carry arms. Every company is divided into squads of twenty-five men, and each squad is commanded by a corporal, who must be a man well acquainted with every individual of the twenty-five which he is appointed to govern. The corps or brigade, as it is called, must consist of as many companies as the inhabitants of the district will make up; but the effective strength of every company is one captain, one ensign, one serjeant, an officer similar to an

English bailiff, called in Portuguese “Meirinho,” ^{A. D. 1812.}
a clerk, ten corporals, and 250 men. Every captain of a company has his own colours, and a drummer; and it is ordered, that as often as the company shall march out in battle array, the captain shall give the colours to the ensign; the captain is also allowed to make one of his own servants drummer, provided he has him properly instructed.

These companies are formed, it must be observed, of the lower classes of the people; the higher classes, and all those who are able to keep a horse, are formed into troops, and are called the Mounted Ordenanza. The troops and companies are trained to arms by their respective Captains once or twice a month, and twice in every year the whole force of the district is assembled by the Captain-major, and inspected by him. The manner in which the Ordenanza of the district are called together on an emergency, is somewhat similar to that used for the assembling of the clans in the Highlands of Scotland in feudal times.

Every man in the kingdom is a soldier of one sort or other, and obliged to have arms in his possession, either for the defence of the particular spot on which he exists, or of the state of which he is a member; those peasants who have

A.D. 1812. not fire-arms have pikes, or a long pole with a bayonet fixed on one end. During the last three years, the Ordenanza of Portugal have cut off an immense number of the French troops. Instances of their cruelty are frequently repeated ; but if we consider for a moment the sufferings which they have undergone, the ruin which has been heaped upon them by the invading army, their conduct must cease to appear as cruel : can a father see his house burnt, his goods pillaged, and his daughters violated, and not sigh for revenge ? Indeed, I am more astonished at the very great moderation of the Portuguese peasantry, than at the cruelties which I have heard recounted.

A RETURN OF THE GENERAL AND FIELD OFFICERS
OF THE PORTUGUESE ARMY, AND OF THE BRITISH
OFFICERS SERVING WITH THAT ARMY, ON THE
1ST OF JULY 1812.

HIS Excellency ARTHUR, Marquis of Wellington, A. D. 1812.

Marquis of Torres Vedras, and Duke of Ciudad Rodrigo, Knight of the Bath, Grand Cross of the Order of the Tower and Sword, Grandee of Spain of the First Class, and Knight of the Order of St Ferdinand, Marshal-general of the Kingdom, and Commander-in-chief of the Allied Army,—29th April 1809.

HIS Excellency Sir William Carr Beresford, Knight of the Bath, and Count of Tramoso, Grand Cross of the Order of the Tower and Sword, Field-marshal and Commander-in-chief of the Portuguese Army, and Councillor of War,—7th March 1809.

O

A.D. 1812. *Lieutenant-Generals, with the Dates of their Com-
missions.*

Manuel George Gomes Sepulveda, Commander of the Order of the Tower and Sword, Councillor of War,—29th April 1793.

D. Antonio Soares de Noronha, Governor of Lisbon, and of the Province of Estremadura, and Councillor of War,—Dec. 17. 1795.

D. Francisco Xavier de Noronha, Councillor of War,—Dec. 17. 1795.

The Condé de Rezende D. Jose, Councillor of War,—Sept. 18. 1799.

Manuel de Almeida Vasconcilles,—June 24. 1804.

Francisco da Cunha e Menezes, Councillor of War,—Feb. 25. 1807.

The Marquis of Olham, one of the Governors of the Kingdom, and Councillor of War,—June 24. 1807.

Francisco de Paula Leite, Governor of Elvas, and of the Province of Alentejo,—June 24. 1807.

Florencio Jose Correa de Mello,—July 24. 1807.

D. Rodrigo de Lancastre,—Jan. 10. 1809.

The Visconde de Sousel, Commander of the 6th district of the line of defence, and Inspector of the lines,—Jan. 10. 1809.

The Visconde de Montealegre, Governor of the ^{A. D. 1812.}
Province of Beira, and Commander of the
Forces in the North,—Sept. 13. 1809.

D. Miguel Pereira Forjaz, Inspector-general of
Militia, and Secretary of Government for Fo-
reign Affairs, War, and Marine,—Jan. 1. 1812.

The Condé de Amarante, Governor of the Pro-
vince of Traz os Montes,—Jan. 1. 1812.

John Hamilton, Major-general in the British ser-
vice, and Inspector-general of Infantry,—Jan.
1. 1812.

*Marechals de Campo, with the Dates of their
Commissions.*

Jose Antonio Botelho de Souza,—Jan. 24. 1807.

Jose Lopes de Souza,—Oct. 2. 1808.

Jose Antonio da Rosa,—Sept. 13. 1809.

Mathias Jose Dias Azedo,—Ditto.

The Conde de Sampayo, Inspector-general of the
Cavalry,—Ditto.

Antonio Marcellino da Victoria,—Ditto.

Antonio de Lemos Pereira de Lacerda, Military
Secretary to the Commander-in-chief,—Oct. 31.
1811.

D. Rodrigo de Lancastre, Governor of St Ubes,
—Jan. 1. 1812.

A. D. 1812. The Visconde de Asseca Salvador Correa,—Jan. 1.
1812.

Richard Blunt, Major-general in the British service,—Ditto.

Brigadier-Generals.

The Marquis de Sabugoza,—June 24. 1807.

The Marquis of Marialva,—Ditto.

Philip Jose de Azambuja,—Nov. 18. 1807.

Agostinho Luis da Fonseca, Sub-Inspector of Militia in Beira and Tras os Montes,—Sept. 19. 1809.

G. A. Madden, Lieut.-colonel in the British service,—Sept. 19. 1809.

Vicente Antonio de Oliveira,—Nov. 15. 1809.

Denis Pack, Colonel in the British service, and Aid-de-Camp to the King,—June 7. 1810.

W. T. Spry, Colonel in the British service,—Aug. 6. 1810.

Charles Fredric Lecor,—May 8. 1811.

Luis Ignacio Xavier Palmarin, Sub-Inspector of Militia in Estremadura,—Ditto.

Antonio Hypolito Costa,—Ditto.

João Lobo d'Almeida Brandão, Governor of Abrantes,—Ditto.

Philip de Sousa Canavarro,—Ditto.

Jose Joaquim Champalimaud,—May 8. 1811.

A.D. 1812.

Manuel de Brito Mozinho, Adjutant-general to the Forces,—Ditto.

Baron D'Eben, Lieut.-colonel in the British service,—Ditto.

Archibald Campbell, Lieut.-colonel in the British service,—Ditto.

Nicolas Trant, Captain and Assistant Quarter-master-general in the British service, Commander of the Order of the Tower and Sword,—Ditto.

Benjamin D'Urban, Lieut.-colonel in the British service, and Quarter-master-general to the Portuguese Forces,—May 8. 1811.

J. Wilson, Commander of the Order of the Tower and Sword,—Ditto.

William H. Harvey, Colonel in the British service,—Ditto.

John Power, Lieut.-colonel in the British service,—Aug. 5. 1811.

Thomas Bradford, Lieut.-colonel in the British service,—Dec. 19. 1811.

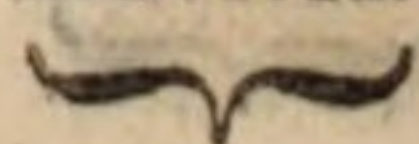
Ricardo Luis Antonio Raposo,—Jan. 1. 1812.

Jose Cardozo de Menezes Souto Maior, Sub-Inspector of Militia in the Province of Minho,—Ditto.

The Conde de Rezende D. Luiz,—Ditto.

Gaspar Teixeira de Magalhaens,—Ditto.

A. D. 1812.

*Colonels.*

Names.	Dates of Commissions.
Francisco D'Alencourt, -	Dec. 17. 1791.
Henrique Pereira da Cunha,	March 17. 1794.
Isodora Paula Pereira, -	Dec. 17. 1795.
João Pinto de Souza, -	March 9. 1799.
Antonio Guedes, -	Oct. 3. 1799.
Ricardo Jose Ferreira, -	Dec. 17. 1799.
Jose Carlos Mardel, -	May 4. 1800.
João Antonio Lemos, -	May 8. 1800.
Melchior da Costa Correa,	June 12. 1800.
João Ribeira da Souza, -	May 4. 1800.
Gabriel Antonio Franco, -	Oct. 29. 1800.
Isidoro d'Almeida, -	Nov. 20. 1800.
Ignacio Joaquim de Castro,	Jan. 13. 1801.
Manuel da Costa Ferreira,	Ditto.
Amaro Vicente, -	Nov. 4. 1803.
Francisco Jose da Fonseca,	July 13. 1804.
Pedro Celestino Soares, -	Sept. 12. 1804.
Caetano Pereira Araujo, -	Oct. 25. 1804.
João Botelho de Lucena, -	Aug. 15. 1805.
Jose Ignacio da Costa Quintella,	June 24. 1806.
Romão d'Arriada, -	Feb. 25. 1807.
Caetano Antonio d'Almeida,	June 24. 1807.
Jose Maria da Moura, -	Ditto.
Euzebia dias Azedo, -	Sept. 15. 1807.

Names.	Dates of Commissions.	A. D. 1812.
Joaquim Jose Ferreira, -	Oct. 3. 1807.	
Manuel da Souza Ramos, -	Oct. 3. 1807.	
Alexander Magno d'Oliveira,	Aug. 21. 1808.	
Manuel Ribeiro Araujo, -	Oct. 15. 1808.	
João Antonio Coutinho, -	Dec. 3. 1808.	
Bernardo da Carmo Borges,	Jan. 4. 1809.	
Christovão da Costa Ataide,	Jan. 10. 1809.	
Antonio Tavares, -	Feb. 18. 1809.	
Gonsalvo Coelho Araujo, -	April 14. 1809.	
Don João d'Amorim Pereira,	Sept. 13. 1809.	
Charles Ashworth, Lieut.-colonel		
British Army, - -	Feb. 28. 1810.	
The Marquis de Ternay, -	April 21. 1810.	
Neill Campbell, Lieut.-colonel		
54th Regiment, -	May 24. 1810.	
Francisco Jose da Moura, -	June 20. 1810.	
L. W. Otway, Lieut.-colonel Bri-		
tish army, - -	Aug. 16. 1810.	
William Collins, Lieut.-colonel		
83d Regiment, -	Oct. 22. 1810.	
F. William Stubbs, Lieut.-colonel		
British army, - -	Feb. 20. 1811.	
João Antonio Tavares, -	Ditto.	
Manuel Pamplona Carneiro,	Ditto.	
Charles Turner, Lieut.-colonel		
R. W. Rangers, - -	April 5. 1811.	

A.D.1812.

Names.

Dates of Commissions.

John Buchan, Lieut.-colonel British army,	-	June 25. 1811.
Carlos Fredrico de Caula,	-	Jan. 1. 1812.
The Marquis of Tancos, Aid-de-Camp to General Noronha,		Ditto.
Alvaro Xavier Fonçeca,	-	Ditto.
Maximiano de Brito Mozinho,		Ditto.
Manuel de Silveira Pinto,	-	Ditto.
Luis de Rego Barreto,	-	Ditto.
George d'Avezé Zuzarte,	-	Ditto.
Antonio de Lacerdo Pinto,		Ditto.
Francisco Xavier da Silva Pereira,		Ditto.
Bernardo de Silveira Pinto,	-	Ditto.
Robert Arbuthnot, Lieut.-colonel British Army, and Military Secretary,	-	Ditto.
William M'Bean, Lieut.-colonel British Army,	-	Ditto.
John Brown, Lieut.-colonel British Army, Inspector of the Cavalry Recruits, and Commandant of the Depot at Salvaterra,	-	Ditto.
John Doyle, Lieut.-colonel British Army,	-	Ditto.
Thomas Neol Hill, Lieut.-colonel British Army,	-	Ditto.

Names.	Dates of Commissions.	A. D. 1812.
John Douglas, Lieut.-colonel British Army,	- - -	Jan. 1. 1812.
John Campbell, Lieut.-colonel British Army,	- - -	Ditto.
Luis Maria de Souza,	- - -	Feb. 5. 1812.

British Officers serving with the Rank of Lieut.-colonel in the Portuguese Service.

Henry Hardinge, Lieut.-colonel British Army, and Deputy Quarter-master-general to the Portuguese Forces,	- - -	June 10. 1809.
George Elder, Lieut.-colonel British Army,	- - -	Ditto.
Michael M'Creagh, Lieut.-colonel British Army,	- - -	Aug. 14. 1809.
Charles Sutton, Lieut.-colonel British Army,	- - -	Ditto.
John Watling, Lieut.-colonel British Army, and Assistant Inspector of Infantry Recruits, and Superintendant of the Depot at Mafra,	- - -	Oct. 16. 1809.
John Grant, Lieut. 3d Dragoon Guards,	- - -	Dec. 3. 1809.

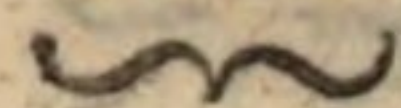
A.D. 1812.	Names.	Dates of Commissions.
~	Edward Hawkshaw, Major British Army,	March 12. 1810.
	Henry Watson, Major British Army,	Ditto.
	Henry Pym, Major British Army,	April 21. 1810.
	John Austin, Major British Army, and Commander of the Forces in Algarve,	May 11. 1810.
	A. C. Crookshank, Major British Army,	May 16. 1810.
	A. W. Campbell, Major 74th Regiment,	June 4. 1810.
	Maxwell Grant, Major 42d Regiment,	June 30. 1810.
	Fredrick Muller, Lieut.-colonel Royal Regiment,	Aug. 4. 1810.
	John Brown, Major British Army,	Nov. 3. 1810.
	H. Le Mesurier, Lieut.-colonel British Army,	June 10. 1809.
	T. Dursbach, Major British Army,	June 6. 1811.
	William Warre, Major British Army,	July 1. 1811.
	Richard Armstrong, Major British Army,	Ditto.
	Bryan O'Toole, Major 39th Regiment,	Nov. 9. 1811.

Names.	Dates of Commissions.	A. D. 1812,
Richard Diggens, Major 11th Dragoons, - - -	Aug. 13. 1811.	
John Prior, Captain 39th Regi- ment, - - -	Jan. 27. 1812.	
Victor Arinchild, Major German Artillery, - - -	March 24. 1812.	
A. Dickson, Major Royal Artil- lery, - - -	Ditto.	
David M'Neill, Major British Army, - - -	April 14. 1812.	
John M'Donald, Captain 88th Regiment, - - -	Ditto.	
Robert John Harvey, Major Bri- tish Army, - - -	Ditto.	
John Rolt, Captain 58th Regt.	Ditto.	
J. H. Algeo, Major British Army,	Ditto.	
John Carrol, Captain 82d Regi- ment, and Commandant of Convalescent Depots, -	Ditto.	
G. Birmingham, Captain British Army, - - -	Ditto.	
Jacob Miller, Captain British Army, - - -	Ditto.	
E. H. Williams, Captain British Army, - - -	Ditto.	
Alexander Anderson, Capt. 42d Regiment, - - -	Ditto.	

A.D. 1812.

Names.

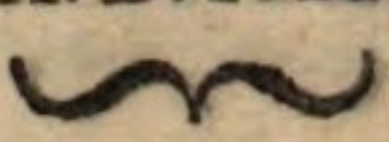
Dates of Commissions.



Ralph Ousley, Captain 63d Re-		
giment,	- - -	April 14. 1812.
John Gommersal, Captain 58th		
Regiment,	- - -	Ditto.

*British Officers who have the Rank of Major in the
Portuguese Service.*

Donald M'Neill, Major British		
Army,	- - -	Aug. 20. 1809.
Charles Trapps, Capt. 72d Foot,		June 20. 1810.
Thomas St Clair, Capt. Royals,		June 22. 1810.
Edward Owens, Capt. 38th Foot,		Sept. 3. 1810.
Dudley St Leger Hill, Major		
British Army,	- - -	Sept. 26. 1810.
Michael Murphy, Captain Buffs,		Oct. 22. 1810.
G. M. Zulke, Capt. 60th Foot,		Nov. 5. 1810.
Charles Kilsha, Capt. 77th Foot,		Nov. 16. 1810.
Richard Carrol, Capt. 5th Foot,		March 1. 1811.
John Beaty, Captain,	- - -	Ditto.
B. H. Wood, Capt. 40th Foot,		June 4. 1811.
J. W. Green, Captain 4th, or		
King's own,	- - -	June 17. 1811.
John Campbell, Capt. 11th Foot,		July 1. 1811.
C. M. Clenchey, Captain Buffs,		July 26. 1811.
G. Chartres, Captain,	- - -	Aug. 31. 1811.
— Wylde, Captain,	- - -	Aug. 30. 1811.

Names.	Dates of Commissions.	A. D. 1812.
H. Lynch, Captain, -	Sept. 18. 1811.	
G. W. Paty, Capt. 32d Foot,	Oct. 13. 1811.	
Alexander Campbell, Captain,	Oct. 29. 1811.	
* Hon. Edward Butler, Captain 14th Dragoons, -	June 22. 1810.	
* George White, Capt. 3d Dra- goon Guards, -	July 6. 1810.	
* Henry Grove, Captain,	Feb. 26. 1812.	
* Charles T. W. M'Lean, Capt. 78th Foot, -	Oct. 13. 1810.	
* Daniel Donohoe, Captain 44th Foot, - - -	Oct. 14. 1810.	
* Alexander Tulloch, Captain Royal Artillery, -	July 18. 1811.	
* Laurence Arnot, Captain,	Sept. 18. 1811.	
* W. W. Cheslyn, Lieutenant 48th Regiment, -	April 14. 1812.	

*British Officers who are serving with the rank of
Captain in the Portuguese Army.*

Regiments.	Names.	Dates of Commissions.
2d Regt. of Arty.	Thomas Cox, -	Dec. 14. 1810.
3d Ditto,	C. Mitchell, -	Feb. 26. 1812.
4th Ditto,	William Brown, -	Oct. 22. 1810.

* Those Officers who have a star opposite their names are
Aggregados.

A. D. 1812.	Regiments.	Names.	Dates of Commissions.
~	1st Regt. of Cavy.	James Owens, -	June 20. 1810.
	2d Ditto,	James O'Kelly, -	Sept. 13. 1809.
	4th Ditto,	Henry Hutchinson,	Sept. 18. 1812.
	5th Ditto,	James Dowdwell, -	July 21. 1810.
	Ditto,	Samuel Hawkins,	June 17. 1811.
	1st Regt. of Infy.	William Queade, -	May 16. 1810.
	Ditto,	William Green, -	Nov. 3. 1810.
	2d Ditto,	Robert Ray, -	May 11. 1809.
	Ditto,	Dugald M'Gibbon,	May 15. 1810.
	Ditto,	Dugald Campbell,	April 5. 1811.
	3d Ditto,	Thomas Smith, -	April 11. 1809.
	Ditto,	Orlando Jones, -	Ditto.
	4th Ditto,	Angus M'Donald,	April 21. 1810.
	5th Ditto,	John Elgie, -	Ditto.
	Ditto,	Jacob Johnston, -	May 7. 1810.
	Ditto,	John M'Namara, -	Dec. 15. 1810.
	6th Ditto,	Alexander Adams,	July 16. 1809.
	Ditto,	Duncan Graham, -	Ditto.
	Ditto,	George Phelan, -	Oct. 29. 1811.
	7th Ditto,	Frederick Armstrong,	Aug. 4. 1810.
	Ditto,	Thomas Sherwenton,	Sept. 3. 1810.
	Ditto,	John Colthorst, -	March 28. 1811.
	8th Ditto,	Thomas Marlay, -	April 11. 1810.
	Ditto,	James Mahir, -	Sept. 26. 1810.
	Ditto,	W. S. Connor, -	April 5. 1811.
	9th Ditto,	William Cotter, -	June 12. 1810.
	Ditto,	T. G. Peacocke,	Dec. 19. 1811.
	10th Ditto,	Hugh Hay Rose,	May 13. 1809.
	Ditto,	M. Morton, -	July 22. 1811.
	11th Ditto,	Charles Waldron,	May 7. 1810.
	Ditto,	George Phiffen, -	March 28. 1812.
	12th Ditto,	W. H. Thornton,	Feb. 26. 1810.
	Ditto,	William White, -	Ditto.
	13th Ditto,	William Berter,	July 7. 1810.

Regiments.	Names.	Dates of Commissions.	A. D. 1812.
14th Regt. of Infy.	Peter M'Arthur,	March 7. 1810.	
Ditto,	Thomas Potter, -	Jan. 2. 1812.	
15th Ditto,	Charles Fitzgerald,	May 16. 1810.	
Ditto,	Thomas Oncey,	June 4. 1810.	
Ditto,	Charles Wheatley,	Nov. 14. 1810.	
Ditto,	Edward Brackenbury,	June 6. 1811.	
16th Ditto,	John Webb, -	Jan. 2. 1812.	
Ditto,	Charles M'Intosh,	Feb. 26. 1812.	
17th Ditto,	William Creswell,	March 12. 1810.	
Ditto,	——— Despard,	Aug. 30. 1811.	
18th Ditto,	Angus Fraser, -	Aug. 14. 1809.	
Ditto,	Hugh Lumley, -	Ditto.	
19th Ditto,	Henry Belson, -	March 24. 1809.	
Ditto,	John Ross, -	Jan. 2. 1812.	
20th Ditto,	Thomas Banbury,	Oct. 27. 1811.	
21st Ditto,	Samuel Beresford,	April 27. 1810.	
Ditto,	John Graham, -	Oct. 29. 1811.	
22d Ditto,	John Pigot, -	Nov. 3. 1809.	
Ditto,	David Skeil, -	March 12. 1810.	
Ditto,	——— Franklin,	June 6. 1811.	
23d Ditto,	John Grant King,	April 11. 1810.	
Ditto,	Thomas Peacocke,	Ditto.	
Ditto,	G. D. Crawford,	Sept. 12. 1811.	
24th Ditto,	George Lennon,	Feb. 14. 1810.	
Ditto,	William Fisher,	Feb. 10. 1811.	
Ditto,	——— Blake, -	Feb. 22. 1811.	
1st Batt. Cacadores,	——— M'Donald,	Nov. 3. 1810.	
2d Ditto,	C. B. Turner, -	Nov. 14. 1810.	
Ditto,	R. P. Stewart, -	Dec. 29. 1810.	
3d Ditto,	William Dobben,	June 6. 1811.	
4th Ditto,	John Wardlaw, -	March 6. 1811.	
Ditto,	——— M'Gregor,	Feb. 24. 1812.	
5th Ditto,	Henry Perry, -	March 12. 1810.	
Ditto,	D. Lalor, -	March 1. 1811.	
6th Ditto,	W. H. Temple,	March 6. 1811.	

A. D. 1812.	Regiments.	Names.	Dates of Commissions.
~	6th Batt. Cacadores.	R. Brunton, -	March 6. 1811.
	Ditto,	John Shewelback,	April 4. 1812.
	7th Ditto,	John Scott Lilly,	Dec. 17. 1808.
	Ditto,	R. W. Torrens,	Feb. 11. 1811.
	Ditto,	—— O'Hara,	June 6. 1811.
	8th Ditto,	Charles Western,	Dec. 27. 1808.
	Ditto,	Baron Daubraw,	Jan. 28. 1809.
	9th Ditto,	John Leitch, -	July 26. 1811.
	10th Ditto,	F. Rickets, -	August 5. 1811.
	11th Ditto,	Thomas Charles Ross,	Ditto.
	Ditto,	B. A. T. Borgh,	Sept. 18. 1811.
	12th Ditto,	Robert Haddock,	Sept. 22. 1810.

British Officers serving with the Rank of Lieutenant in the Portuguese Army.

2d Regt. of Cav.	Joseph Jacob, -	Nov. 15. 1809.
4th Regt. of Infy.	A. Campbell, -	July 22. 1810.
7th Ditto,	Joseph Murphy,	Nov. 9. 1811.
9th Ditto,	Robert Hughes, -	July 24. 1811.
12th Ditto,	John Green, -	Feb. 18. 1810.
Ditto,	John Wage Russel,	July 1. 1811.
Ditto,	Charles Hodge, -	Ditto.
14th Ditto,	Bartholomew Cassey,	Nov. 14. 1810.
20th Ditto,	Beauford Crowgay,	Nov. 3. 1810.
22d Ditto,	James Mitchell, -	Feb. 11. 1811.

British Subjects serving with the Rank of Ensign in the Portuguese Army:

John Horn,
 Edward Town, } 1st Infantry.
 William Hill, 3d Ditto.

D. Denholm, }
C. Holman, } 8th Infantry.

A. D. 1812.

T. Edwards, 9th Ditto.

D. Denovan, 12th Ditto.

William Galbraith, 15th Ditto.

David Fraser, 22d Ditto.

John Leitch, 8th Cacadores.

Charles M'Charty, Pay-master, 12th Ditto*.

* The reader will find the General Staff of the Army, the Staff of the Commander-in-chief, and of the General Officers commanding Provinces, in the Appendix.

CHAP. V.

The Laws, Punishments, and Military Establishments, of the Portuguese Army.

A.D. 1812.

~~~~~  
Courts-  
martial.

IN the year 1643, John IV. King of Portugal, was pleased to institute a military court at Lisbon, for the trial of all offences committed in the army, and for the management of all matters connected with the armed force of the kingdom. It was called the council of war, and still continues to exist; and the officers of this court are in their joint capacity the advisers of the King in all military affairs. The council of war is composed of general officers, with one or two civil judges; and all offences committed by general officers are tried in this court, and till lately they had the privilege of reviewing the sentences of all courts-martial, as it was only through this court that they could be brought before the Sovereign. Since Marshal Beresford took the command of the army, they have entrusted him with this power;



so that, instead of being transmitted to the council of war, the proceedings of all regimental and general courts-martial are now forwarded directly to the Commander-in-chief, or rather to the Auditor-general, to be by him laid before the Commander-in-chief. A. D. 1812.

In reading the directions for courts-martial, as detailed in Lippe's Regulations, and which are still in force, it appears that every court-martial must be preceded by a court of inquiry, or by an investigation similar to our courts of inquiry, I shall give a pretty literal translation of the chapter on courts-martial, as I think it may be of use to those officers who have already entered the Portuguese service, as well as to those who may yet join it, to know the law and forms which exist on this head.

If a Field Officer commits a crime, it is ordered that the officer commanding the regiment to which he belongs, together with another Field Officer, shall investigate the matter, and lay their proceedings before the Commander-in-chief; and that, if the Commander-in-chief thinks proper to order a court-martial, it must consist of a General Officer as President, and of two Lieutenant-colonels, two Majors, and two Captains, as members.

If the delinquent has only the rank of Captain,



A. D. 1812. the previous investigation must be made by a Field Officer and a Captain, and the court which tries him must consist of a Lieutenant-colonel as President, and of two Majors, two Lieutenants, and two Ensigns, as members.

If a Captain is tried for a capital offence, the President of the court-martial must be a Colonel, and the members must consist of two Lieutenant-colonels, two Majors, two Captains, three Lieutenants, and three Ensigns.

In the case of a subaltern officer, it is ordered that the investigation shall be made by a Captain and Subaltern, and that the court shall consist of a Field Officer as President, and of two Captains, two Lieutenants, and two Ensigns; if, however, a Subaltern Officer is tried for a capital offence, a Lieutenant-colonel must sit as President of the court, and two Majors, three Captains, three Lieutenants, and three Ensigns, as members.

If a non-commissioned officer is to be tried, the previous investigation is to be made by a Lieutenant and an Ensign, and the court must be formed of a Captain as President, and of two Lieutenants, two Ensigns, two Serjeants, and two Corporals: if the offence is capital, a Field Officer must sit as President, and three Captains, three Lieutenants, three Ensigns, and three Corporals, are to form the court.



The court which tries a private soldier for his <sup>A.D. 1812.</sup> life, must consist of a Field Officer as President, and of three Captains, three Lieutenants, three Ensigns, three Serjeants, three Corporals, three Lance Corporals, and three private soldiers, as members: if, however, the crime is not capital, it only requires a Captain as President, and two Lieutenants, two Ensigns, two Serjeants, two Corporals, two Lance Corporals, and two private soldiers, to form the court. In this last case, the previous investigation must be made by a Captain and Subaltern, if the offence is capital; but by a Lieutenant, if not.

The Auditor of the Regiment to which the prisoner belongs is to assist at the court-martial: his duties are the same as those of the British Judge-Advocate; he is to prevent the introduction of improper questions or evidence, and has the power of stopping the trial, provided the court does not submit to his advice.

As soon as the court-martial is formed, and all the members are present, the President orders the prisoner to be brought into court; his irons are taken off, so that he may be at perfect liberty. The Auditor then reads in a clear and distinct manner the papers connected with the investigation already made, which include not only the charges and proofs, but also the prisoner's defence. As



A. D. 1812. soon as the Auditor has done reading, the prisoner is asked by the President if he has any thing more to add to his defence ; if he has nothing to add, or as soon as he has added what he wishes, he is remanded to his prison ; the court is then cleared, and the Auditor proceeds to read the investigation a second time, taking pains as he goes on to explain the nature of the charges, the proofs, and also the defence which has been made. After this is done, the President arranges the whole under separate heads, and the members of the court are called upon to give their votes on each distinct point. The President collects the votes, beginning with the youngest member, and giving his own vote last. The votes are always to be given with reference to the articles of war, and as soon as the whole are collected, the Auditor makes out the sentence of the court from the majority of votes.

If the prisoner is sentenced to suffer death, each member is obliged to sign and seal his vote. As soon as the proceedings are finished, they are to be transmitted to the Commander-in-chief, to be laid before the Sovereign, whose opinion and confirmation is always necessary before the sentence can be carried into execution, unless it shall be evident that delay will prove prejudicial to the service ; in which case the sentence



of the court may be carried into effect immediately. A. D. 1812.

Such are the forms observed by the Portuguese in their courts-martial: the whole business is done by the Auditor and the two officers appointed to investigate the matter; for it is evident the members can only form their opinion from the story that is brought before them by these three individuals. The proceedings are sometimes spun out to an amazing length; some courts-martial, which commenced soon after Marshal Beresford took the command of the army, have not yet completed their investigation, though more than two years have elapsed. I am afraid that delay is not the only faulty part of the present constitution of these courts; Marshal Beresford has been obliged, on one or two occasions, to notice the sentences of several, which were not only absurd, but contrary to proof. The Auditor-général has published some observations, explaining the existing laws of the country, which are really good. Some change is certainly called for in this department of the army, for though it might have been a good regulation some hundred years ago, for private soldiers to sit upon courts-martial, they ought not, in my opinion, to be permitted to do so at the present day. An officer is supposed to possess information, and to have honour to guide



A.D.1812. him ; but what is there to guide the private, who can neither read nor write, and who perhaps was aiding and assisting in the very crime for which his comrade is tried ? and so foolishly is the court which tries a private soldier constituted, that the non-commissioned officers and privates can always out-vote the President and commissioned members. Marshal Beresford, in virtue of a special authority from the Prince Regent, has introduced a summary mode of trial in extraordinary cases, similar to the drum-head courts-martial in the British service ; but he has not been able to get the law altered which authorises private soldiers to sit as members of the court. Every nation is jealous, more or less, of any interference with old established laws or customs.

Articles of  
War.

The Articles of War of the Portuguese army are twenty-nine in number ; and as it is strictly ordered that every person connected with that army, of whatever rank or denomination, is to be guided and judged of by these Articles, I trust I shall be doing a service to those British Officers who may not have an opportunity of consulting them in the original, by giving a short abstract of each Article in these Observations.

The Articles of War are ordered to be read to the troops once in every five days, that is, on the



days on which they receive their pay; for, in- A.D. 1812.  
stead of being paid weekly, and in advance, as  
the British troops are, the Portuguese troops re-  
ceive their pay every fifth day, but not till five  
days pay is due; the Auditor, a kind of Judge-  
advocate attached to each regiment, is bound not  
only to read, but to explain the Articles of War  
fully to every soldier in the ranks, and to every  
recruit on his joining the corps.

## ARTICLE I.

Determines that if any officer or soldier shall  
be found guilty of having opposed or disobeyed  
his superior officer on service, he shall be sent to  
work at the fortifications; but if the opposition  
or disobedience occurred while under arms, the  
offender shall be shot.

## ART. II.

If any officer or soldier shall give false infor-  
mation to his superior officers, knowing it to be  
false, he shall be expelled from the service with  
disgrace.



A.D. 1812.



## ART. III.

Any officer or soldier found guilty of quitting his post before the enemy, without leave, is to be shot.

## ART. IV.

Any officer or soldier found guilty of cowardice, to be shot.

## ART. V.

Any officer or soldier found guilty of using expressions, during an engagement, which can tend to intimidate the men, is to be shot.

## ART. VI.

Any officer or soldier found guilty of forcing a sentry, is to be shot.

## ART. VII.

All non-commissioned officers are to obey and pay proper respect to the commissioned officers.

## ART. VIII.

All quarrels and disputes among soldiers are



forbidden, and any soldier found guilty of killing <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> his comrade in a dispute, is to suffer death, 

## ART. IX.

Soldiers sent on duty are to execute the orders they receive, at every risk.

## ART. X. XI. XII.

Non-commissioned officers and soldiers found guilty of getting drunk while on guard, or of producing disturbances, are to be punished according to the judgment of the Court-martial.

## ART. XIII.

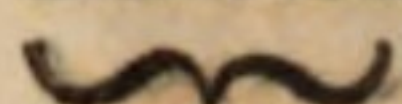
No officer, non-commissioned officer, or soldier, is to enter a garrison except by the proper gates. Disobedience of this Article, death.

## ART. XIV.

If any officer, non-commissioned officer, or private, shall be convicted of having deserted from the service during war, he shall suffer death: if convicted of having deserted during peace, he shall be sent to work at the fortifications for six years.



A.D. 1812.



## ART. XV.

Any officer, non-commissioned officer, or soldier, found guilty of conspiring against the state, shall suffer death.

## ART. XVI.

Any non-commissioned officer or soldier found guilty of having spoken disrespectfully of his superiors, shall be sent to work at the fortifications.

## ART. XVII.

Any officer, non-commissioned officer, or soldier, found guilty of being discontented with his pay, quarters, or uniform, is to be punished as a conspirator.

## ART. XVIII.

Any officer, non-commissioned officer, or soldier, who shall be convicted of stealing, is to be severely punished; but if convicted of stealing what belongs to the King, he shall suffer death.

## ART. XIX.

Any non-commissioned officer or soldier who is



found guilty of not taking care of his horse and accoutrements, shall for the first and second time be severely punished, but for the third time he shall suffer death. A. D. 1812.

## ART. XX.

Any non-commissioned officer or soldier found guilty of neglecting his arms and accoutrements, or of losing or lending them, is to be severely punished.

## ART. XXI.

Any non-commissioned officer or soldier who is found guilty of contracting debts, or of concealing his debts from his officer, is to suffer severe corporal punishment.

## ART. XXII. XXIII.

Any non-commissioned officer or soldier found guilty of forging a passport, is to be severely punished.

## ART. XXIV.

Any officer, non-commissioned officer, or soldier, who shall be found guilty of having com-



A. D. 1812. mitted a crime while drunk, shall suffer double the punishment he would have suffered had he committed the same crime when not drunk.

## ART. XXV.

Any officer, non-commissioned officer, or soldier, who is found guilty of feigning disease, or of having wilfully rendered himself unfit for service, is to be banished to Africa for life.

## ART. XXVI.

Soldiers found guilty of borrowing money from their companions, are to be punished.

## ART. XXVII.

Any non-commissioned officer or soldier who shall marry without leave of his Colonel, is to be punished.

## ART. XXVIII.

Any officer found guilty of peculation, is to be expelled from the service, and obliged to pay back whatever he obtained unlawfully.



## ART. XXIX.

All officers, non-commissioned officers, and soldiers, are to regulate their conduct by the strict rules of virtue, candour, and honesty; they are to fear God, reverence and love their King, and execute with exactness all orders which they may receive from any of their superior officers.

Such are the Articles of War. The Punish-  
ments of the law are various, and some of them  
very different from those in use among the British  
forces. For all capital offences, the criminal is  
either sentenced to be shot or strangled to death;  
hanging is never practised in Portugal.

Military  
Punish-  
ments.

For crimes not capital, the most ordinary sentences are, banishment to Africa, to labour at the public works with a chain about the ankle or wrist, imprisonment, &c. &c. When a delinquent is sentenced to suffer corporal punishment, it is generally twenty, thirty, or fifty "Pancadas de espada de Prancha," which he is ordered to receive. As this kind of punishment may not be understood by some of my readers, I shall beg leave to explain it more at length. In the Portuguese army, it is not necessary to bring a soldier to a court-martial for every petty crime; the



A. D. 1812. commanding officer of a regiment can order a man to be “pancaded” at his pleasure; he can even give him fifty of these pancadas, and a court-martial by its sentence can inflict no more; when, therefore, a Portuguese soldier gets drunk, or commits any crime for which a British soldier would be tried by a regimental court-martial, and sentenced to be flogged, his chastisement is very summary. He is paraded in front of the battalion, attended by the Commanding Officer, the Adjutant, Serjeant-major, and every Corporal of the regiment; he is there informed that, in consequence of misconduct, he is to receive so many “pancadas;” the will of the commanding officer being the law. In some instances the poor fellow is made to take off his jacket and waistcoat, but in general the senior Corporal steps up to him, draws his sword, and begins to strike him across the shoulders with the broad side of it; if the Corporals do not lay it on with all their strength, the Serjeant-major attacks them. The Corporals change regularly after every five strokes, until the number determined on is inflicted.

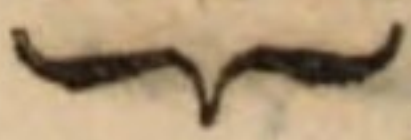
Of all existing military punishments, I think this is the most severe. The heavy sword of the Corporal has no spring whatever in the blade, and when this punishment is inflicted by a strong-armed man, it is most horrible: I have known



more than two or three instances where the poor sufferer has dropped down dead from a rupture of the aorta, immediately after receiving thirty of these *pancadas*. A.D. 1812.

Marshal Beresford, being early convinced of the horrid nature of this punishment, ordered a small cane to be used instead of the sword, which, though still keeping up the national method of punishing, deprived it of its fatal consequences. When his Excellency took the command of the army, the officers and non-commissioned officers were in the habit of kicking and buffeting the poor soldiers on every occasion, and I believe, long custom had made striking the soldier lawful; he, however, set his face decidedly against this most abominable practice. It was also so repugnant to the feelings of British officers, that those who were appointed to command regiments immediately put a stop to it, and I believe now an officer is scarcely ever known to lift his hand or cane to a soldier. In former times, the internal economy of the regiments and companies was but little attended to; and though the soldier was robbed and pillaged by his Serjeant and Furriel, he seldom could procure any redress; but when the British officers joined this service, they endeavoured to make the soldiers feel that they were



A. D. 1812.  men ; and it was by attending to their complaints, and endeavouring to have justice done to every one, and by giving the soldier a confidence in himself and in his officers, that the army has been brought to its present high state of discipline.

Recruiting  
Service.

The six grand divisions or provinces which compose the kingdom of Portugal are governed by General Officers, who have Captain-majors under them in the several districts, and Captains of Ordenanza, who command in the subdivisions. As a civil state, however, the provinces are divided into Commarcas, Termas, and Freguizias. The chief civil magistrate in the Commarca is called Corregidor ; he is appointed by the Crown, and his authority and duties are similar to those of the sheriff-deputes of Scotland. In the cities and towns similar to our Burghs, the civil authority is vested in the Camera, which signifies the same as Town-Council. The “ Juis de Fora,” who is the chief magistrate and President of the Camera, is appointed by the Crown, and no man is qualified for this office until he has taken the degree of Bachelor of Laws at the University of Coimbra ; but the other officers are chosen by the inhabitants, and from their own number. The subdivision “ Terma” which I have mentioned, com-



prehends the district of country which is subject <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> to the jurisdiction of the chief magistrate of the city or town near which it lies. Freguizia corresponds with Parish in Great Britain, and in every village there is a “Juis Ordinario,” *i. e.* Ordinary Judge, or “Juis de Povo,” *i. e.* Judge of the People.

The Recruiting Service is conducted by the Captain-majors and Captains of Ordenanza; and from the duties of these officers, already briefly detailed, it is evident that they must be perfectly acquainted with the number and description of the inhabitants of the district which they command; and when it becomes necessary to levy recruits for the regular army, the General of the province issues an order to the Captain-major of the district from which the regiment for whom the levy is wanted is recruited; the Captain-major, or his deputy, passes a review of the district, picks out the number of young men required, who are generally sent to prison for a few days, until the whole are collected, when he marches them off, under an escort of his Ordenanza troops, to the head-quarters of their regiment. These lads, as soon as they join the regiment for which they were recruited, are divided among the several companies of the corps, and are imme-



A.D. 1812. diately sworn in ; they have no option but to take the oath, and if they leave the corps without leave, for four-and-twenty hours after being sworn in, they are deserters, and as such are liable to be shot.

These strong measures, which the present state of Portugal has rendered necessary, are grounded upon that first law of all nations, which makes the defence of the state and of the Sovereign the paramount duty of every subject. It is only those who have actually witnessed what Portugal has suffered, who can be truly sensible of the blessings we enjoy in this happy country, where, by sacrificing a little, a very little, we enjoy much ; and could those philosophers of the present day, whose declamatory harangues, and ideal miseries, have tended so much to lead astray the uninformed in various parts of the nation, be transported for a few months to that suffering country, they might learn to appreciate that happiness of which they appear so tired.

By the established laws of Portugal, it is determined, that in every district in which a brigade of Ordenanza is formed, there shall be two regiments of Militia. The men are balloted for that service in the same way as in this country, and all who are married, or not fit to serve in the troops of the line, are subject to the ballot.



The peasant, when he becomes a Militia-man, <sup>A.D. 1812.</sup> is obliged to find his own uniform, and in a great measure to support himself; for the Militia have only half the allowance of pay and rations of the troops of the line, and that only when on duty out of their own district. The few old men and boys that remain in the district after the regiments of the Line and Militia are completed, constitute the companies and corps of Ordenanza.

When Marshal Beresford began to complete the different regiments, the recruits were sent at once to their several corps, and then were drilled and formed; but on the army taking the field in May 1810, his Excellency made choice of the island of Peniche for a recruiting depôt. He appointed Colonel, now Major-general Blunt, of the Buffs, a very distinguished officer, who had entered the Prince Regent's service, to command this depôt, and gave him the commission of Inspector-general of the Recruiting Service. Since this depôt was organized, the whole of the recruits for the Infantry of the Line and Light Troops have been sent to it; and under the superintendence of General Blunt, they have been drilled and organized by officers and non-commissioned officers from their respective regi-



A. D. 1812. ments, and sent to join their comrades in the field,

That this institution has been of the very greatest utility to the army is beyond a doubt, and it does equal credit to the Commander-in-chief, and to the officers who have been employed in its organization ; but it is to be regretted that a healthier place could not be procured, with the other advantages of the island of Peniche, as certainly a great number of the unfortunate recruits fell a sacrifice to the epidemic of that swampy spot, which no doubt acted with double effect upon the depressed, half-starved, and ill-treated peasants sent as recruits to this depôt.

The recruiting depôt under General Blunt was removed last year to Mafra, a healthier and better place ; but unless the recruits undergo a strict medical examination on their being first levied, the depôt will never be healthy, nor will it be possible to keep the army effective : the sick, the lame, and the lazy, are all crowded into the same dungeon, when recruited by the Captain-major ; contagion is generated, and very often those, and those alone, who were fit for the service, are carried off by disease.

Last year Marshal Beresford established a recruiting depôt for the Cavalry at Salvaterra, and



gave the direction of it to Colonel John Brown. A. D. 1812. Under the personal superintendence of this distinguished officer, the recruits are disciplined, and the young horses are trained to the service. This establishment has tended much to keep the few regiments that are mounted in an efficient state.



## CHAP. VI.

*State of the Civil Establishments of the Portuguese Army.*

A.D. 1812.  MARSHAL BERESFORD was for some time so actively engaged with the military arrangements necessary to enable the army to take the field, and with the operations of that army in the field, that the civil establishments remained in a great measure in their original wretched state. His Excellency, however, returned to Lisbon in July 1811, as soon as the return of Lieutenant-general Hill allowed him to quit his command in the British army; and, in conjunction with the Government, several very important alterations were effected in the different departments. I know that Marshal Beresford had more difficulties to overcome, in his endeavours to give some system to the civil establishments of his army, than in any other department; but the same firmness and perseverance which enabled him to overcome diffi-



culties, by many considered insurmountable, supported him through those plans of improvement which were indispensibly necessary to render his brigades of well-disciplined and gallant troops equal to the active and harassing campaigns of modern warfare. A.D. 1812.

When Marshal Beresford took the command of the army, this department formed no separate establishment. The emoluments of the Quarter-master-general were given to a superannuated general of the court; and the duty, when the army took the field, which happened but seldom, was done by officers from the corps of engineers, who were called "Deputados," deputies of the Quarter-master-general. Quarter-master-general's Department. Early in 1809, Brigadier-general Benjamin D'Urban was appointed Quarter-master-general. In organizing the department, he adopted the British system in as far as it was possible. Several of the most distinguished officers of the corps of Royal Engineers were appointed his assistants, and one or two British officers, of great knowledge and experience in the duties of this department, were appointed to act as deputies under him. The native officers are now so well acquainted with the duty, that the constant attention of General D'Urban has become



A. D. 1812. unnecessary, and he has been permitted to take the command of the cavalry-division.

Commissariat Department.

The Commissariat department of the Portuguese army was conducted, till lately, upon principles so radically bad, that although the expense was enormous beyond all calculation, the army, on almost every occasion, was actually starved. On the advance from Santarem to Almeida, in the spring of 1811, the Portuguese army was often without bread for weeks together, and very frequently without meat; yet the utmost exertions of Marshal Beresford, with even the interference of Lord Wellington, could not procure a change of that system, so deep rooted was the evil.

The Commissariat is divided into two departments; the one charged with the provisions, the other with the transport, of the army. The provision-department was managed by a Junta of administration, which sat in Lisbon, and who had their Intendants in every province, and their Feitors, "Storekeepers," in every town. The government intrusted to this Junta the management of the different kinds of provision and forage, which they were enjoined to procure at the lowest price. Their Storekeepers were therefore directed to purchase on the spot what was requir-



ed for the troops, and, of course, at the cheapest A. D. 1812. rate. It very seldom happened that magazines were formed in any of the provinces, or any measures taken to provide against either a real or feigned scarcity. When the army took the field, Marshal Beresford got Commissaries appointed to the different brigades; but as those officers were almost always without money to pay for what was wanted, their presence was of little avail.

The Storekeeper, to please the Junta in Lisbon, endeavoured to purchase the different articles of provision at the lowest rate; and, as the poor farmer either could not or would not sell at the price offered, the officers commanding brigades, or regiments, were obliged to have recourse to military force, and what could be found was dragged forth and given to the troops. What was seized in this way, and generally what was bought by the Portuguese Commissaries, was paid for by bills upon the Junta in Lisbon; these bills, even in the best times, were seldom taken up till twelve months after they were due, and in the present state of the kingdom, they were considered as actually worth nothing. Every art was therefore used by the farmer to bury and conceal his grain; and it has not unfrequently happened, that the army has been starving for want of provisions, when the country, nay the very village where they were quartered, was full of it.



A.D. 1812.

It was from these hidden stores that Massena drew the greater part of his supplies during the time that he remained in the position of Santarém, and which were discovered to him, for the most part, by the servants who had assisted in the concealment, and who were bribed to this villainy.

The transport-department was under the direction of an Intendant-general, and was somewhat better managed; but it was also defective in many points, and dreadfully expensive. This ruinous system, however, is happily at an end. The whole of the provision and store department is put under the direction of one man, who has the commission of Commissary-in-chief; and the government have adopted such wise regulations, as afford a hope, that in a short time the whole of the debts incurred by the former Junta will be liquidated. All purchases of stores or provisions for the army are made by the Commissary-in-chief, and are paid for either by cash, or by bills upon the treasury, payable on demand. The officers of this department are regularly commissioned by the Prince, and hold nearly the same rank as the officers of the British commissariat department. The farmer is no longer afraid to bring forward his grain for sale; and the great attention which Marshal Beresford has paid to the just demands o



the peasantry, has been completely successful in <sup>A.D. 1812.</sup> gaining their confidence. The transport-department has also been regulated, and rendered more efficient as well as less expensive, so that the commissariat department of the Portuguese army is now nearly upon a par with that of the British.

The officers of the Portuguese army have no allowance of bat or forage money; but, in that army, every commissioned officer has a certain number of rations of provision and forage, according to his rank; and if he does not draw the whole in kind, he has an allowance in money for each undrawn ration, which is in fact almost the same thing as the sum of money given to the British officers, under the title of allowance for bat and forage.

When Sir William Carr Beresford took the com-<sup>Medical</sup>mand of the Portuguese army, its hospital, <sup>Depart-</sup>or<sup>ment.</sup> medical department, was managed by a board called the "Central Junta," which sat in Lisbon, and was composed of the Physician-general of the army, the Surgeon-general, and an officer who is called the Contador-fiscal\*. The Medi-

---

\* This officer is Controller of hospital accounts, and also the Treasurer and Purveyor of the department.



A. D. 1812.

cal Staff consisted of a First Physician and First Surgeon of the army, Physicians and Surgeons of Brigades, Physicians and Surgeons of Hospitals, Surgeon-Majors, and Assistant-Surgeons of Hospitals, and Infirmeiros \*.

Almost the whole of the higher appointments in this department were complete sinecures. The Physician-general had retired on full pay, and his duty was done by a gentleman who had the commission of Physician-general during the war only †. The Surgeon-general had emigrated to the Rio de Janeiro with his Prince, leaving a deputy who did no duty; and the Condator-fiscal, enjoying the good things of his office, had also got an assistant appointed, who did the duty; so that, in fact, the heads of the medical department acted altogether by deputy: but, wretched as this Junta was, from the way in which it was conducted, these officers performed some duty, which was not the case with the general and regimental staff. The gentlemen who were called Physicians of Brigades had never seen the troops to which they were said to be attached; nor in-

---

\* A description of hospital-assistants, rather more respectable than common ward-masters.

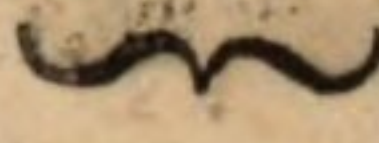
† This gentleman also retired, and got another to act as his deligado.



deed was their presence necessary, as they had <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> never possessed the means of performing one act of duty to the sick. And though the sick of the army were sent to general hospitals, those physicians were equally unknown in such establishments; and, indeed, though highly paid, were to be heard of and traced only through the pay-lists of the treasury; and many of the medical officers of the army, amongst whom the person supposed to be performing the duties of the Surgeon-general was one, would never have been discovered but for this clue: they had retired to remote quarters of the kingdom, and there lived in idleness, enjoying the fruits of their pensions, or pursuing private practice.

The organization of the Regimental was, if possible, still worse than that of the General Staff. Every regiment was furnished with a Surgeon-major, and six Assistant-surgeons; but these, as if to defraud the country which incurred such an expense, were rendered nugatory and useless, and positively prevented from performing any duty whatever. The laws of Portugal prevent Surgeons from interfering in any manner, or prescribing, in a medical case, if a Physician lives in the district; and, by a law passed in favour of the Apothecaries, they were prevented from compounding or mixing drugs; and I was told that they were sworn upon the Holy



A.D. 1812.  Evangelists, not to interfere in the drawing of teeth; the Surgeon's duty was to perform operations and dress wounds, but he was neither furnished with instruments to perform the first, nor means of doing the last. The sick soldier was therefore left to nature, or the chance succour of some convent or charitable institution, until he could be removed to a general military hospital, where he came under the treatment of Civil Physicians and Surgeons, and from which it rarely happened that he returned to his corps.

Many of the gentlemen who held the commission of Surgeon-majors of regiments, had never performed one act of duty to a patient; and, from the manner in which they opposed every innovation. They seemed most firmly determined never to perform one. Others, favoured by their commanding officer, from whom, without any previous examination, they had received their appointments, lived, like the physicians above mentioned, remote from their corps, or served in the families of their patrons, or were lent to some grandee of the court. The sick and infirm soldier was therefore hurried to the general hospital, the receptacle of all, where, in many instances, the Civil Physicians, combined with the local departments, and supported by the head of the medical staff, reaped *their* full harvest of sinecure



and peculation. The plunder upon the state was <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> incalculable; for as all employed must have participated in the secret, so all shared in the general pillage. Monstrous as this abuse was, and loudly as it called for correction, the British medical officer, when introduced to the Portuguese service, was forced to shut his eyes to its extent, and attend to the more urgent duties of humanity in succouring and preserving the sick.

The only person in the country who possessed sufficient virtue and resolution to reform the department, and whose abilities were equal to the task, was confined in the dungeons of the Inquisition, through the intrigues of the Physician-general, who, it appeared, was anxious to make the most of his appointments. It is impossible to conceive how much art was used for obtaining possession of the sick soldier's body, in order that it might be made a medium of plunder upon the state. The general hospitals were spread over the country as traps into which he was made to fall, and from which, from his innate love of indolence, and the indulgence of better fare than he was accustomed to, he seldom made an effort to retreat; and, when once received within the walls of these hospitals, it was a difficult matter to get him removed from them, even when restored to perfect health. In such receptacles as these,



A. D. 1812. founded and supported upon such principles, it need scarcely be added, that humanity, good order, and medical science, were equally forgotten and neglected. No one attempted to enforce even the shadow of discipline, and the picture which many of the general hospitals exhibited may be conceived, but cannot possibly be described. They were infinitely more destructive to the army than the sword of the enemy, and they would have destroyed it much faster than it could have been recruited, had it not been for the exertions of Marshal Beresford. He early foresaw the consequences of a department so regulated, and indeed they were soon felt; for when the army took the field in 1809, there were not ten Assistant-surgeons with the whole of the forces, and even those deserted when they came to pass the frontier.

As the above sketch may appear to the British reader somewhat incredible, I shall beg leave to digress for a moment, to inquire more minutely into the causes which had operated to produce these abuses.

When the Chevalier ARAUJO was appointed secretary at war, he found the medical department of the army in a worse state than I have described it. Some reform was absolutely necessary, but the heads of the department, at that period, were



ill able to accomplish his views. Under these cir-<sup>A. D. 1812.</sup>  
cumstances, ARAUJO made choice of DR ABRAN-  
TES, a physician in Lisbon, who had risen by his  
abilities to the first practice in that city. He ap-  
pointed him Inspector-general of military hospi-  
tals, and the department was entirely given up to  
his controul and management. A new code of  
regulations was drawn up by Abrantes, and men  
of integrity and worth were promoted in the ser-  
vice. The enormous expences of the general hos-  
pitals were reduced more than two-thirds, and  
many of the most flagrant abuses were corrected.  
But the entrance of the French army into Portugal  
put an end to his labours, and the intrigues of his  
enemies got him removed from the department,  
very soon after the restoration of the kingdom\*.

A very different system was adopted by the  
successors of Abrantes. Relations and favourites  
were the only persons admitted to offices of trust  
and importance, while worth and merit were al-  
together banished from the department. The  
Physician-general was incapable of exertion him-  
self, and he attempted to regulate the department  
without quitting Lisbon; but, instead of regulat-  
ing, he brought it to the state already described,  
and it has been nothing improved by his Deligado.

---

\* His Royal Highness the Prince Regent of Portugal was



A. D. 1812.

The impossibility of keeping the army in the field without an efficient medical staff, was early felt by Sir William Carr Beresford; and on his making a representation of this to the British government, an Inspector of Hospitals, and twelve

---

pleased, on the 8th of January 1812, to declare the innocence and fidelity of Dr Abrantes. This was a sentence which he had every reason to expect from one of the best of Princes; and I certainly supposed that he would have been restored immediately to his former situation in the medical department of the army, as, from what I have seen and do know, I am led to believe, that it is only under the superintendence of such a man that the existing abuses can be thoroughly corrected.

*At present the extra expences of the military hospitals of the Portuguese army exceed L. 80,000 per annum!!—*I have before me a few memoranda, which were submitted to the Commander-in-chief by Mr Fergusson at the beginning of last year, in which he has *proven from facts*, that the sick of the army can be taken care of, and better too than they are at present, without putting the country to *one farthing of additional expence!* Now, *eighty thousand pounds* are certainly of some moment at the present time, both to England and Portugal; and I should think that any plan for saving such a sum is worthy of consideration; and I have no hesitation in affirming, that under such men as Dr Abrantes and Mr Fergusson, who possess zeal, activity, and intelligence, not only this sum would be saved, but that the department would be brought to a degree of perfection seldom equalled. Under the present system of intrigue and favouritism, it must go on from bad to worse.



Staff Surgeons, were appointed to the forces A.D. 1812.  
under his command.

Dr M'Gregor, who was appointed the Inspector of Hospitals, did not proceed on this service, so that the junior officers arrived in Portugal under many disadvantages; yet, with this little band of British medical officers, Marshal Beresford was able, in a great measure, to stem the dreadful tide of mortality which, at one time, threatened to leave him without a soldier in the field. Nothing proved so detrimental, or tended to limit their exertions so much, as their being reported to the Portuguese government as *Surgeons*. The term was laid hold of by the head of the department, to degrade them in the eyes of the army, and of the native medical officers; and the laws of the country were brought into play, that their usefulness might be limited\*. Notwithstanding all these disadvantages, however, they were able to enforce order, regularity, and discipline, in the hospitals where they held the superintendence.

Early in 1810, William Fergusson, Esq. was

---

\* The writer of these Observations, and some of his brethren, have been frequently told, that they could not perform duties both important and necessary, *because they were Surgeons*.



A. D. 1812.  appointed Inspector of Hospitals, vice M<sup>c</sup>Gregor, and arrived at Lisbon. This gentleman was soon convinced of the wretched state of the whole department, and he lost no time in pointing out to the Commander-in-chief such arrangements and alterations as were more immediately called for\*.

According to the law, as it stood in 1809, the Physician-general, by virtue of his commission, had the appointment of all Physicians, Surgeons, Assistant-surgeons of Hospitals, and Infirmeiros, with such pay and allowances as he judged proper; and those officers were always chosen from the civil practitioners of the city or town where the military hospital was established. The Physicians and Surgeons of Brigades were recommended by the Physician-general, and commissioned by the Prince. The Surgeon-majors of regiments, however, were appointed by warrant from the Colo-

---

\* Mr Fergusson was appointed Inspector-general of Portuguese military hospitals, by the Governors of Portugal, and his authority in the department was declared to be equal with that of the Physician-general; but when his commission came from the Brazils, it was found that he was appointed only an Inspector of Hospitals, for the purpose of superintending the concerns of such British sick as should be admitted into Portuguese hospitals!! And he was expressly prohibited, by his commission, from interfering with the duties of the Physician-general.



nel of the corps, and the Assistant-surgeon had <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> only the nomination of the Surgeon-major. The Physicians and Surgeons of Brigades, though commissioned officers, had no rank in the army; the Surgeon-major ranked as the junior subaltern of his corps, and the Assistant-surgeons were considered as second Serjeants. Mr Fergusson was at great pains to make himself acquainted with the existing laws and customs of the service, and being well aware of the impossibility of doing any thing with a staff so degraded, he was enabled, within two months after his arrival, to get the regimental staff put upon a most respectable footing. To prevent ignorant or improper persons being admitted into the service, a board, consisting of the Physician-general, and one British and two Portuguese Surgeons, was established in Lisbon, to examine all candidates for regimental appointments; and, according as they were found qualified by this board, they were appointed Surgeon-majors or Assistant-surgeons of regiments. A decree of the Portuguese government was also obtained, that all medical officers approved of by this board as Surgeon-majors, should have the rank of Captain in the regiments to which they were appointed; and that Assistant-surgeons should have the rank of Lieutenants. The pay of Surgeon-major was raised from



A.D.1812. twelve to thirty mil reas per month, and that of Assistant-surgeon from six mil reas to twenty.

In the beginning of 1810, a very considerable supply of hospital bedding, and of surgical instruments and apparatus, was sent out from England for the Portuguese forces. These Mr Fergusson took care to dispose of to the best advantage. Every regiment was furnished with thirty sets of hospital bedding, and a most excellent field equipment of medicines, instruments, and surgical materials. The British officers were either recommended to be continued with brigades, or attached to general hospitals, as it was supposed their services would be most beneficial to the country.

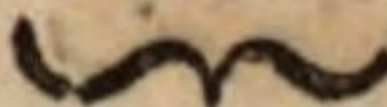
It is therefore due to this officer to state, that in the short period of four months after his arrival in the country, the medical department of the Portuguese army was placed upon a better and more efficient footing than it ever had been, or could ever have been under the native officers at that time in the service; and had the government and Commander-in-chief permitted Mr Fergusson's plans and regulations to have been carried into effect to their full extent, I have no hesitation in saying, that the Portuguese would have been equal, if not superior, to any nation in Europe, in the hospital-department of their army.



The regulations for the management of general <sup>A.D. 1812.</sup> hospitals in Portugal occupy 60 folio pages. They were compiled by Dr Abrantes in 1805, and are divided into three sections. The first, which is in a great measure taken from the French regulations of 1801, treats of the classification and establishment of hospitals, and of the transport of the sick. The second, which contains two chapters, regulates the health-department. It is original, and adapted to the customs and exigencies of the country; as also the third section, which treats of the purveyor-department, and regulates the finance, as well as the police, of the military hospitals. In the first edition of these Observations, I have stated, that with some excellent regulations, this code contained many useless, if not absurd directions. I stated this from having witnessed, for more than two years, the incomprehensible, and often absurd manner, in which these regulations were explained by the present chief of the medical department.

I have already observed, that the sick in the general hospitals are treated by the practitioners of civil life. The pay allowed these officers, as regulated by the head of the department, forms so miserable a stipend, that, to avoid starving, they are obliged to pursue their private practice, and thus neglect their hospital; or if they do give



A.D. 1812.  their time to the hospital, they must look for remuneration from the corrupt perquisites of their place; and as in many cases they are forced into the service, and compelled to treat the sick soldier completely against their wills, the hospital-duties form but a secondary consideration, and occupy but little of their time or attention.

The immediate government of every hospital is entrusted to the First Physician, whose duties and responsibility are detailed at great length in the book of regulations, and though apparently clothed with great authority, he has in fact very little. Having no military rank or power, he cannot find fault with the diet, treatment, or general management of any patient, nor can he dismiss even the most subordinate officer on the establishment\*. The Portuguese hospitals form a civil department under the direction of the Secretary at War, and over which the military officer has, legally speaking, no controul whatever. No hospital-officer can be tried by a court-martial, and, according to the book of regulations, villains and inhuman servants are to be punished by fine, reprimand, and dismissal, &c. &c.

---

\* That is, according to the explanations given of the law by the Deligado of the Physician-general.



There are two distinct sets of officers in every <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> military hospital, and who are perfectly independent of each other. The officers of health are governed by their First Physician, and those of the "Fazenda," or store department, are under the superintendence of an "Almoxarife," or Purveyor of the hospital. But, instead of following a clear and simple system, every hospital has First and Second Physicians, First and Second Surgeons; and although the First Physician is considered the immediate director of the hospital, the Surgeons and Assistant-surgeons are governed only by their immediate chief, the First Surgeon; while the Apothecaries and Infirmeiros are directed by the chiefs of their respective classes. The Regulamento certainly gives the First Physician complete authority, but the subsequent explanations of Dr Barreto have set aside that authority\*.

---

\* When I was at Lamego in March last, the apothecary of the military hospital in that city had purchased some corrupted bark, which he had smuggled into the hospital, and was dispensing to the sick soldiers. The fraud was detected by the vigilance of the First Physician, and a board of medical officers ordered to examine his stores. The report of this board, and its censure of the apothecary, were transmitted to the deligado of the Physician-general. But, instead of being dismissed with disgrace, as was expected, he was caressed by Dr Barreto, and



A. D. 1812.

The second description of officers, viz. those who have the charge of the hospital stores, and who are entrusted with the providing of every thing necessary for those hospitals, or for the sick, are so numerous, that it would appear as constructed for the purpose of covering corruption, and that their number should render detection impossible; for beside the "Almoxarife," or Purveyor, there are "Escrivaôs," Accountants; "Escriptuarios," Clerks; "Compradors," Buyers; "Fiels," Storekeepers, and Assistant-fiels without number. All officers of this class are appointed by the Contador-fiscal. The Almoxarife is supposed to have the complete command of the funds of the hospital, yet the Comprador makes his own bargains; and in fact, among such a multitude of people, no one knows his proper duties, so that the service stands still, and the sick are entirely neglected.

The Physicians introduced into the military

---

the First Physician censured for allowing the bark to enter the hospital!—By the regulations, the apothecary cannot receive any article into his stores, until it is examined by a board of medical officers. Here, then, a subordinate officer was protected in direct violation of the law, and the chief of the establishment censured for doing his duty.—This is but one of many circumstances of a similar nature which I could state, and of which I have the documents in my possession.



hospitals by the Physician-general and his Deli- A.D. 1812.  
gado were certainly, in the practical part of their }  
profession, about a century behind the rest of  
Europe. I have attended to their hospital-prac-  
tice for many months ; I have reasoned with them  
on the mode of treatment of several diseases ;  
and, though I have found several gentlemen who  
could reason theoretically on the *modus tractandi*, I  
have uniformly found that their treatment differed  
very materially from their reasoning. I must ex-  
cept, however, in this statement, a DR CALDAS, a  
JORDAN, and a SEQUEIRA, as well as a BOBELLO, a  
SOARES, and a CORAÇA, men of honour and inte-  
grity, well acquainted with their profession, and  
zealous in the service of their country.

In the military hospitals, all the remedies which  
are prescribed for the sick are reduced to a kind  
of distinct pharmacopeia for each hospital. The  
different formulæ are numbered, and instead of  
writing his prescription at length, the Physician  
has only to order such a number ; the doses, and  
proper modes of administering which, the Infir-  
meiros are supposed to know perfectly ; as, though  
the method of preparing or forming the prescrip-  
tion is sufficiently pointed out in these formulæ, no-  
thing is said about the doses or manner of giving  
the remedy. It would be a great saving of labour,  
if the same method was adopted in the British hos-



A.D. 1812. pits. The pharmacopeia of each hospital is in general formed by the First Physician of that hospital, with the assistance of the other Physicians, and is supposed to contain a sufficient number of simple and compound medicines, with their combinations, for every possible disease that can occur; it is called the "Formulario," and occupies generally the first twenty or thirty pages of the hospital prescription-book. In examining a number of these formularios, I find that decoctions, of one sort or another, but generally of dried herbs, ridiculously simple, form more than three-fourths of the whole; almost every medicine is given in the form of decoction by the uninformed *military Physicians*; common mixtures are used but seldom, and I rarely found that they gave medicines in the form of pills; bark was almost always given in decoction, and was used indiscriminately in every species of fever; purgatives were never had recourse to, and they appeared to have the utmost horror for the lancet. I am speaking here of what I observed in some of the provincial military hospitals; for, in the course of a most intimate acquaintance with the general hospital practice in Portugal for nearly two years, I can declare, that I never knew general blood-letting used as a remedy in disease; and I have often



seen objections made to the use of blisters in A. D. 1812. complaints where a liberal and free use of the lancet would have been most effectual. I have seen patients die from impeded respiration, the consequence of active and severe inflammation of the pleura, while the Physician calmly ordered the sacraments to be administered, and trusted the cure to the known virtues of a common and trifling pectoral decoction. I allude to the practice of some physicians in the hospitals of Abrantes and Figueira.

I do not mention these things by way of reproach upon the profession, but to shew the description of medical officers which were introduced into the service in that country by the late Physician-general and his Deligado. They have no idea of the use of the cold bath in fever; and so afraid are many of exposing the patient to the air, that the beard was seldom or never allowed to be shaved; and I have known a Physician visit a sick soldier in the hospital daily for two months, without ever thinking of ordering his hands and face to be washed, or of even suggesting a change of linen. This circumstance occurred in the hospital at Abrantes, and the Physician's name was "Santos."

To sum up the whole, they had not the smallest idea of that active and decided practice by



A. D. 1812. which acute diseases are often arrested in their progress at the beginning, and by which, in the military service, the soldier is at once restored to health and his duty. The use of calomel, of antimony, and of the stronger purgatives, and, in short, of every active remedy whatever, was little known, and the patient was often left, without any real assistance from medicine, to take his chance in the crowded wards of the hospital, while the disease run its course. The delirium consequent upon the doctrines of Brown, when ill understood, strongly pervades the younger part of the profession in Portugal, and its effects are manifested in their practice, by a strenuous cultivation of costiveness, and the administration of wine, animal food, and other heating articles, at the beginning of all acute, febrile diseases. In chronic ailments, when the routine of decoction had failed to perform a cure, or rather when the disease had failed to destroy the patient in the usual time, he was generally sent to the warm baths at Caldas, where, in the summer months, some hundred of Malingerers were frequently collected. It required the positive command of Marshal Beresford to oblige the army Physicians to use mercury in syphilis; and when the British medical officers were introduced into their hospitals, they found patients who had been eight and ten months in the hospital with the common itch.



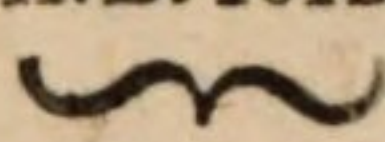
This is a strong picture, but I can appeal to all <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> my professional brethren who are, or have been in Portugal, for its justness: and though, in private life, many scientific men are to be met with who possess a knowledge of their profession, and are an honour to their country, yet few of these individuals are to be found in the medical department of the army under the present management; and even these few are so harassed by intrigues and misrepresentations, that I believe they would give double their salary to be quit of their appointments.

There is no want of talent in Portugal, and when men of science have been retained in the service, or induced by their love for their country and their Prince to devote their attention to it, the military hospitals under their management have risen to a degree of excellence seldom equalled; and I feel a pleasure in recording, as a conclusion to these remarks, that the general military hospitals in the city of Coimbra, under the direction of Dr Antonio d'Almeida Caldas, Substitute-professor of Medicine, are now as perfect as any institutions of the kind can possibly be made,



## C H A P. VII.

*A General View of the Present State of the  
Kingdom of Portugal.*

A.D. 1812.  As the constitution of Portugal is in a great measure purely military, every male subject, I have more than once observed, is born a soldier, and obliged to serve in one or other of the descriptions of force which have been organized in the kingdom. Affonso I. received the title of King from his army on the Campo d'Ourique, but he received no addition to the powers which he already possessed as Infant of Portugal, and General of the army. The laws which were judged necessary for the government of the kingdom were framed by the General Cortes, and submitted to the Monarch for his sanction; and while the three estates of the kingdom continued to deliberate for the public good, we find them equally alive to the glory of their Sovereign, the independence



of their nation, and their own personal liberty. <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup>  
The meetings of this body, however, have been discontinued in latter times, and the laws and regulations are now issued by the King in council. The restrictions upon the royal prerogative, if there were any, have fallen into disuse, and the Sovereign has become in a great measure an “absolute Monarch.”

Valour, and a strong desire of military fame, have always been the leading features of the Portuguese character; and when commanded by their Princes, or by officers in whom they could confide, they have, in every period of their existence as a nation, distinguished themselves as soldiers. But the revolutions of ages, and the corrupt manners of modern times, have had a powerful effect upon the moral, as well as physical constitution of that and every other nation in Europe. These effects are more visible among the higher classes in Portugal, than among the middling and lower classes. The Portuguese Fidalgos are certainly not that high-spirited, honourable race of men they were some centuries ago; yet there are many, and a great many too, of the nobility of that kingdom, who would do honour to any nation, and to any age. The early introduction of the luxuries of the East into Portugal, the system of bribery and corruption



A. D. 1812.  which was resorted to by Philip II. of Spain to secure the crown, on the death of the Cardinal Henry, and which it was necessary to continue during the whole period of the usurpation, together with that indolence and inactivity which a want of proper objects of ambition has induced, have all contributed to produce that degeneracy which has long continued to exist. The Court of the Inquisition has also been a severe check upon the mental improvement of the Portuguese, both high and low; and the jealousies and intrigues of the clergy have in almost every instance cropt the very buddings of genius.

In the hands of wicked and designing men, the holy religion of Jesus has often, in every country, been perverted to the worst of purposes; and it is but too evident, that Portugal has suffered as much as any other from the interference of the ministers of religion in things foreign to their holy office. They have long possessed a powerful interest in the state, and many of the miseries of that now suffering country, may still be traced to their too great influence with well-meaning Sovereigns.

The celebrated D. Luis da Cunha, ambassador of Peter II. and John V. at the court of France, in his political testament, which was addressed by him in his latter days to Joseph I. while he was



Prince of Brazils, observes, that “when his High-<sup>A.D. 1812.</sup>ness came to the throne, he would find many fine towns and villages almost deserted, such as, the cities of Lamego and Guarda, and the villages of Fundão and Covilam, in the Upper Beira, and the city of Bragança in the province of Tras os Montes. That if he should ask why these places were in ruins, and their manufactures destroyed, he might find few who would dare to tell him the truth, namely, that the Inquisition, imprisoning and destroying many for the crime of Judaism, and obliging others to fly with their capital for fear of confiscation, or of being imprisoned also, had desolated these cities and towns, and ruined the manufactures of the country, which, for the most part, were carried on by the people denominated “*New Christians* \*.”

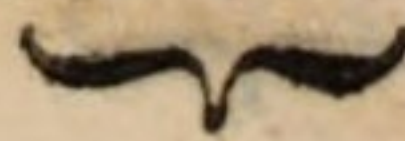
In the present contest, the clergy have taken an active and zealous part in the cause of Europe and of their country, and their sufferings and sacrifices have in some measure atoned for their former delinquencies.

The exertions of the Bishop of Oporto, (now the Patriarch elect), at the beginning of the Re-

---

\* The descendants of the Jews, who, in the time of King Manuel, were compelled to conform to the Christian religion.



A. D. 1812.  volution, must be fresh in the recollection of every one. They are hinted at in the slight sketch which I have given of the events of that period; and I have to add, that the unwearied zeal with which his Excellency still attends to the affairs of the nation, is such as to entitle him to the respect and gratitude of both Prince and peasant.

PRINCIPAL SOUZA, another ornament of the church, deserves also to be particularly mentioned. His family have long been endeared to their Sovereign and their country, and his Excellency has certainly been of infinite service to both in the present glorious struggle for the independence of Portugal\*.

I have been led to believe, that the law which prevents intermarriages in Portugal has tended to weaken the mental as well as bodily powers of the higher classes; for in all nations where the nobility are prevented from intermarrying with the people, the former will infallibly degenerate. The oak, though it flourish for ages in the soil where it is planted, will at last cease to grow. The possession of absolute power by the monarch is also un-

---

\* Their Excellencies the Patriarch, and Principal Souza, are members of the Regency.



favourable to the preservation of truth and honesty in his court; and the system of private or secret denunciations, (first introduced by the Court of Inquisition), has been the cause of many cruel and unjust proceedings against innocent, unoffending individuals. A. D. 1812.

In reviewing the characters of the various Princes who have filled the throne of Portugal, I do not find it possible to apply the word *Tyrant* to any one; and if they have erred in latter times, it has been in not taking that active part in the administration of affairs which was really necessary, and in delegating to their ministers (often disposed to be tyrants) powers which they ought to have exercised personally. For a long time past, the courts of justice have been acknowledged to be notoriously corrupt, and the known merciful disposition of the Sovereign has but too often given a boldness to villainy, which it could not otherwise have attained. The tyranny and oppression of the magistrates in some of the distant parts of the kingdom, have in many instances exceeded all bounds, and the vile and mercenary conduct of such wretches has but too often tended to bring the government of the country into disrepute with strangers, who either could not know, [or had not an opportunity of ascertaining, the true state of things.



A. D. 1812. In Portugal, the peasant, contented with his humble lot, has few wishes beyond what the spot where he lives can gratify; however much he may be oppressed, his sufferings seldom reach farther than his own village; and though convinced of the innate goodness of the Prince, and of the justice which would be done him by the government, he almost never thinks of carrying his complaints to the foot of the throne. It is therefore evident, that no blame can attach to a government for permitting such evils, when their existence is unknown to that government; and there is no free press, as in this country, to bring these transgressions before either the government or the people.

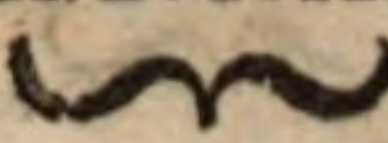
A consciousness of this, too, often induced a continuance of that system of oppression, which, happily for the nation, is, I trust, for ever at an end. The present government, active and vigilant, has been quick to punish, as well as to reward, in the civil departments of the state; while the firm and manly conduct of Sir William Carr Beresford has succeeded in eradicating from the military service, those villains who had long degraded both it and the nation.

The mass of the inhabitants of large cities, led away by their passions and their vices, are nearly the same in every country; and although they



may influence the revolutions in a nation, a vir-<sup>A.D. 1812.</sup>  
tuous and loyal peasantry will at all times give  
stability to a throne. In this respect Portugal is  
peculiarly blessed, for the little intercourse which  
is kept up between different parts of the nation  
has entirely prevented the spreading of corrup-  
tion to any great extent; and in the interior we  
find a happy, contented, and loyal race of inha-  
bitants, among whom Christianity exists in some-  
what of its primitive purity, and who are blessed  
with a truly large portion of the milk of human  
kindness. Amidst all the wild and revolutionary  
speculations of the last twenty-five years, they  
have remained alike firm to their religion and  
their Prince, and have baffled every attempt of  
enlightened and intriguing revolutionists to con-  
vert them; and no Sovereign on earth is more  
truly beloved by his subjects, than JOHN, Prince  
Regent of Portugal. I do not speak at present  
from the reports or information of others; I have  
travelled over the greater part of Portugal, and  
have been a frequent and admiring witness of both  
their loyalty and devotion. There is a class of  
Portuguese, however, among whom every species  
of low cunning and intrigue is prevalent to a  
great degree. The origin of these vices may be  
traced to the unjust and tyrannical measures re-  
sorted to in the days of King Manuel, for the



A. D. 1812.  conversion and extirpation of the Jews; and their preservation is in some respects owing to the inquisitorial persecutions which the New Christians have suffered in every succeeding age. But, as these persecutions are at an end, it is to be hoped that their effects will soon pass away, and sincerity and confidence be restored among every class of citizens.

For many years, nay for centuries, the population of Portugal has been upon the decline. This has been owing to the rapid increase of religious establishments during that period, and also to the voluntary as well as forced emigration to the colonies in America, but chiefly to the almost total neglect of agriculture, of which I shall treat in the next section.

According to the best information which I have been able to procure, the population was not greater forty years ago than at present, though it has certainly varied much in the intervening period. I am not altogether convinced, however, that the return which is given by the Author of a Memoir on the Population of Portugal, in the Transactions of the Royal Academy of Sciences, Vol. I. is completely to be relied upon. It is said to have been collected by the Bishops in 1770-1, soon after the present esta-



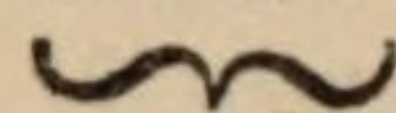
blishment of Bishoprics; but as the calculation <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> is made at five persons to every inhabited house, it must differ considerably from the real population, that number being by no means a fair proportion for the kingdom in general.

The table which I now present to the public, may be relied on for its accuracy. It was taken at the beginning of last year, from the actual returns of each parish, and first given to the public in the *Investigador Portuguez*, a literary and political Journal, published monthly in London; and I have ascertained its correctness by a comparison with the original documents.



*Population of Portugal in 1811.*

A.D. 1812.



| Provinces.   | Bishopricks.  | Number of parishes in each Bishoprick. | Number of Inhabitants.          |          | Number of inhabited houses. |
|--------------|---------------|----------------------------------------|---------------------------------|----------|-----------------------------|
|              |               |                                        | Males of different ages.        | Females. |                             |
| ESTREMADURA. | PATRIARCHATE. | 333                                    | From 1 to 7, 37,128             | 36,047   | 117,730                     |
|              |               |                                        | 7 to 25, 69,196                 | 69,691   |                             |
|              |               |                                        | 25 to 40, 53,626                | 53,531   |                             |
|              |               |                                        | 40 to 60, 50,245                | 47,846   |                             |
|              |               |                                        | 60 to 80, 18,773                | 17,846   |                             |
|              |               |                                        | 80 to 100, 2,005                | 1,749    |                             |
|              |               |                                        | Above 100, 7                    | 17       |                             |
|              |               |                                        | 230,080                         | 222,597  |                             |
|              |               |                                        | Born in 1810, 7,544             | 7,234    |                             |
|              |               |                                        | Died in ditto, 8,102            | 7,372    |                             |
|              |               |                                        | Diminution of population, - 658 | 138      |                             |
|              | LEIRIA.       | 50                                     | From 1 to 7, 5,629              | 5,244    | 17,948                      |
|              |               |                                        | 7 to 25, 10,278                 | 10,547   |                             |
|              |               |                                        | 25 to 40, 6,222                 | 7,656    |                             |
|              |               |                                        | 40 to 60, 6,789                 | 7,134    |                             |
|              |               |                                        | 60 to 80, 3,134                 | 3,774    |                             |
|              |               |                                        | 80 to 100, 302                  | 325      |                             |
|              |               |                                        | Above 100, 2                    | 3        |                             |
|              |               |                                        | 32,356                          | 34,683   |                             |
|              |               |                                        | Born in 1810, 1,021             | 993      |                             |
|              |               |                                        | Died in ditto, 920              | 854      |                             |
|              |               |                                        | Increase of population, - 101   | 139      |                             |



A. D. 1812.

| Provinces.   | Bishopricks.        | Number of parishes in each Bishoprick. | Number of Inhabitants.         |          | Number of inhabited houses. |
|--------------|---------------------|----------------------------------------|--------------------------------|----------|-----------------------------|
|              |                     |                                        | Males of different ages.       | Females. |                             |
| ESTREMADURA. | PRIORATE OF CRATO.  | 37                                     | From 1 to 7, 2,908             | 2,968    | 8,084                       |
|              |                     |                                        | 7 to 25, 4,956                 | 4,787    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 25 to 40, 2,976                | 3,864    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 40 to 60, 3,147                | 3,440    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 60 to 80, 1,179                | 1,367    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 80 to 100, 113                 | 126      |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | Above 100, 5                   | 1        |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 15,284                         | 16,553   |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | Born in 1810, 528              | 594      |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | Died in ditto, 600             | 544      |                             |
|              | PRIORATE OF THOMAR. | 17                                     | Diminution of population, - 72 | Incr. 52 | 5,594                       |
|              |                     |                                        | From 1 to 7, 576               | 1,491    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 7 to 25, 3,566                 | 3,226    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 25 to 40, 2,283                | 2,324    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 40 to 60, 2,029                | 2,356    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 60 to 80, 840                  | 1,077    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 80 to 100, 77                  | 111      |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 9,365                          | 10,585   |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | Born in 1810, 330              | 290      |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | Died in ditto, 335             | 260      |                             |
| BEIRA.       | CASTELLO-BRANCO.    | 81                                     | Increase of population, - 4    | 30       | 10,472                      |
|              |                     |                                        | From 1 to 7, 6,423             | 5,887    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 7 to 25, 11,338                | 11,659   |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 25 to 40, 7,214                | 8,330    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 40 to 60, 6,438                | 6,968    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 60 to 80, 2,142                | 2,512    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 80 to 100, 181                 | 258      |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | Above 100, 0                   | 1        |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | 33,736                         | 36,615   |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | Born in 1810, 1,412            | 1,350    |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | Died in ditto, 1,198           | 845      |                             |
|              |                     |                                        | Increase of population, - 214  | 405      |                             |



A. D. 1812.

| Provinces. | Bishopricks. | Number of parishes in each Bishoprick. | Number of Inhabitants.          |          | Number of inhabited houses. |
|------------|--------------|----------------------------------------|---------------------------------|----------|-----------------------------|
|            |              |                                        | Males of different ages.        | Females. |                             |
| BEIRA.     | COIMBRA.     | 278                                    | From 1 to 7, 25,096             | 27,742   | 72,444                      |
|            |              |                                        | 7 to 25, 41,986                 | 44,559   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 25 to 40, 28,550                | 34,103   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 40 to 60, 26,398                | 30,000   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 60 to 80, 10,585                | 13,575   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 80 to 100, 1,045                | 1,282    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Above 100, 3                    | 8        |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 133,663                         | 151,370  |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Born in 1810, 4,204             | 4,003    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Died in ditto, 3,792            | 3,733    |                             |
| BEIRA.     | AVEIRO.      | 72                                     | Increase of population, - 412   | 270      | 23,985                      |
|            |              |                                        | From 1 to 7, 2,620              | 7,138    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 7 to 25, 14,314                 | 15,307   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 25 to 40, 8,423                 | 10,726   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 40 to 60, 9,070                 | 10,748   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 60 to 80, 3,217                 | 3,874    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 80 to 100, 253                  | 332      |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Above 100, 2                    | 8        |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 37,899                          | 48,133   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Born in 1810, 1,560             | 1,380    |                             |
| BEIRA.     | GUARDA.      | 206                                    | Died in ditto, 1,707            | 3,072    | 25,902                      |
|            |              |                                        | Diminution of population, - 147 | 1,692    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | From 1 to 7, 8,147              | 8,131    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 7 to 25, 17,404                 | 18,016   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 25 to 40, 9,713                 | 11,066   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 40 to 60, 9,446                 | 10,745   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 60 to 80, 2,667                 | 3,119    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 88 to 100, 186                  | 209      |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Above 100, 0                    | 2        |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 47,463                          | 52,088   |                             |
| BEIRA.     | GUARDA.      | 206                                    | Born in 1810, 1,751             | 1,729    | 25,902                      |
|            |              |                                        | Died in ditto, 1,481            | 1,354    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Increase of population, - 270   | 475      |                             |



A. D. 1812.

| Provinces. | Bishopricks. | Number of parishes in each Bishoprick. | Number of Inhabitants.        |          | Number of inhabited houses. |
|------------|--------------|----------------------------------------|-------------------------------|----------|-----------------------------|
|            |              |                                        | Males of different ages.      | Females. |                             |
| BEIRA.     | VIZEU.       | 200                                    | From 1 to 7, 14,045           | 13,463   | 37,288                      |
|            |              |                                        | 7 to 25, 24,186               | 24,745   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 25 to 40, 14,757              | 18,974   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 40 to 60, 15,035              | 17,680   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 60 to 80, 5,946               | 6,597    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 80 to 100, 529                | 528      |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Above 100, 2                  | 3        |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 74,500                        | 81,990   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Born in 1810, 2,532           | 2,501    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Died in ditto, 2,437          | 2,379    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Increase of population, - 95  | 122      |                             |
|            |              |                                        |                               |          |                             |
|            | PINHEL.      | 147                                    | From 1 to 7, 4,344            | 2,938    | 10,308                      |
|            |              |                                        | 7 to 25, 7,709                | 6,501    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 25 to 40, 5,331               | 4,447    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 40 to 60, 5,651               | 4,086    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 60 to 80, 1,523               | 1,036    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 80 to 100, 90                 | 55       |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Above 100, 0                  | 1        |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 24,648                        | 19,064   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Born in 1810, 669             | 641      |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Died in ditto, 626            | 641      |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Increase of population, - 34  | 10       |                             |
|            |              |                                        |                               |          |                             |
|            | LAMEGO.      | 238                                    | From 1 to 7, 12,269           | 11,776   | 34,017                      |
|            |              |                                        | 7 to 25, 20,788               | 21,135   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 25 to 40, 13,666              | 16,067   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 40 to 60, 13,499              | 14,074   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 60 to 80, 5,114               | 5,714    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 80 to 100, 489                | 583      |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Above 100, 12                 | 4        |                             |
|            |              |                                        | 65,837                        | 69,983   |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Born in 1810, 2,485           | 2,369    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Died in ditto, 2,091          | 1,952    |                             |
|            |              |                                        | Increase of population, - 394 | 417      |                             |
|            |              |                                        |                               |          |                             |



A. D. 1812.

| Provinces. | Bishopricks.         | Number of parishes in each Bishoprick. | Number of Inhabitants.                                                                                                                                   |                                                                                 | Number of inhabited houses. |
|------------|----------------------|----------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
|            |                      |                                        | Males of different ages.                                                                                                                                 | Females.                                                                        |                             |
| BEIRA.     | LIBERTY OF STA CRUZ. | 6                                      | From 1 to 7, 423<br>7 to 25, 831<br>25 to 40, 486<br>40 to 60, 483<br>60 to 80, 115<br>80 to 100, 9<br><hr/> 2,347                                       | 407<br>814<br>657<br>559<br>214<br>17<br><hr/> 2,668                            | 1,378                       |
|            |                      |                                        | Born in 1810, 74<br>Died in ditto, 66<br>Increase of population, - 8                                                                                     | 69<br>66<br>3                                                                   |                             |
| MINHO.     | BRAGA.               | 1,292                                  | From 1 to 7, 54,453<br>7 to 25, 94,290<br>25 to 40, 59,292<br>40 to 60, 62,841<br>60 to 80, 27,038<br>80 to 100, 2,005<br>Above 100, 40<br><hr/> 300,859 | 53,304<br>100,606<br>75,733<br>74,090<br>30,641<br>2,841<br>28<br><hr/> 337,243 | 162,960                     |
|            |                      |                                        | Born in 1810, 11,580<br>Died in ditto, 8,000<br>Increase of population, - 3,580                                                                          | 10,267<br>8,604<br>1,663                                                        |                             |
|            | PORTO.               | 339                                    | From 1 to 7, 26,071<br>7 to 25, 52,473<br>25 to 40, 29,342<br>40 to 60, 30,186<br>60 to 80, 10,623<br>80 to 100, 992<br>Above 100, 8<br><hr/> 149,698    | 24,424<br>53,366<br>35,368<br>33,335<br>11,880<br>1,047<br>11<br><hr/> 160,431  | 81,913                      |
|            |                      |                                        | Born in 1810, 5,384<br>Died in ditto, 3,405<br>Increase of population, - 1,979                                                                           | 5,244<br>3,446<br>1,798                                                         |                             |



A. D. 1812.

| Provinces. | Bishopricks.      | Number of parishes in each Bishoprick. | Number of Inhabitants.          |               | Number of inhabited houses. |
|------------|-------------------|----------------------------------------|---------------------------------|---------------|-----------------------------|
|            |                   |                                        | Males of different ages.        | Females.      |                             |
| MINHO.     | LIBERTY OF GRIJO. | 7                                      | From 1 to 7, 542                | 410           | 1,456                       |
|            |                   |                                        | 7 to 25, 949                    | 806           |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 25 to 40, 541                   | 610           |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 40 to 60, 739                   | 646           |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 60 to 80, 272                   | 183           |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 80 to 100, 24                   | 19            |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | <u>3,067</u>                    | <u>2,674</u>  |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | Born in 1810, 95                | 87            |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | Died in ditto, 60               | 77            |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | Increase of population, - 35    | 10            |                             |
| ALENTEJO.  | EVORA.            | 144                                    | From 1 to 7, 9,217              | 6,308         | 29,244                      |
|            |                   |                                        | 7 to 25, 15,552                 | 15,999        |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 25 to 40, 11,878                | 11,761        |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 40 to 60, 12,994                | 11,954        |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 60 to 80, 4,476                 | 4,648         |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 80 to 100, 412                  | 465           |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | Above 100, 3                    | 5             |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | <u>54,532</u>                   | <u>51,140</u> |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | Born in 1810, 1,959             | 1,900         |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | Died in ditto, 2,941            | 2,691         |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | Increase of population, - 982   | 933           |                             |
|            | PORTALEGRE.       | 41                                     | From 1 to 7, 2,812              | 2,668         | 9,162                       |
|            |                   |                                        | 7 to 25, 5,833                  | 5,925         |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 25 to 40, 3,589                 | 2,901         |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 40 to 60, 3,630                 | 3,586         |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 60 to 80, 962                   | 1,226         |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | 80 to 100, 62                   | 96            |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | Above 100, 0                    | 2             |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | <u>16,888</u>                   | <u>16,404</u> |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | Born in 1810, 627               | 635           |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | Died in ditto, 727              | 744           |                             |
|            |                   |                                        | Diminution of population, - 100 | 109           |                             |



A.1 .1812.

| Provinces. | Bishopricks. | Number of pa-<br>rishes in each<br>Bishoprick. | Number of Inhabitants.               |              | Number of in-<br>habited houses. |
|------------|--------------|------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|--------------|----------------------------------|
|            |              |                                                | Males of different ages.             | Females.     |                                  |
| ALENTEJO.  | ELVAS.       | 44                                             | From 1 to 7, 2,310                   | 2,577        | 11,492                           |
|            |              |                                                | 7 to 25, 8,049                       | 6,017        |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 25 to 40, 5,625                      | 4,584        |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 40 to 60, 5,928                      | 4,735        |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 60 to 80, 2,012                      | 1,700        |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 80 to 100, 154                       | 176          |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | Above 100, 3                         | 0            |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | <hr/> 23,381                         | <hr/> 19,769 |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | Born in 1810, 755                    | 807          |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | Died in ditto, 1,388                 | 1,263        |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | Diminution of po-<br>pulation, - 633 | 456          | 31,034                           |
|            |              |                                                | From 1 to 7, 9,706                   | 10,136       |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 7 to 25, 15,868                      | 17,062       |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 25 to 40, 11,373                     | 13,127       |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 40 to 60, 10,746                     | 11,071       |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 60 to 80, 2,931                      | 3,494        |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 80 to 100, 242                       | 325          |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | Above 100, 2                         | 3            |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | <hr/> 50,868                         | <hr/> 55,218 |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | Born in 1810, 2,170                  | 2,050        |                                  |
| ALGARVE.   | FARO.        | 70                                             | Died in ditto, 2,205                 | 2,188        | 28,214                           |
|            |              |                                                | Diminution of po-<br>pulation, - 35  | 138          |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | From 1 to 7, 9,577                   | 8,873        |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 7 to 25, 16,528                      | 17,825       |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 25 to 40, 10,129                     | 12,327       |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 40 to 60, 10,317                     | 10,817       |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 60 to 80, 2,598                      | 2,616        |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | 80 to 100, 266                       | 279          |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | Above 100, 4                         | 2            |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | <hr/> 49,419                         | <hr/> 52,739 |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | Born in 1810, 2,268                  | 2,154        |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | Died in ditto, 2,530                 | 1,631        |                                  |
|            |              |                                                | Increase of popula-<br>tion, - 873   | 523          |                                  |



| Provinces.      | Bishopricks.          | Number of parishes in each Bishoprick. | Number of Inhabitants.          |          | Number of inhabited houses. |
|-----------------|-----------------------|----------------------------------------|---------------------------------|----------|-----------------------------|
|                 |                       |                                        | Males of different ages.        | Females. |                             |
| TRAS OS MONTES. | MIRANDA AND BRAGANZA. | 334                                    | From 1 to 7, 6,090              | 5,816    | 20,900                      |
|                 |                       |                                        | 7 to 25, 12,213                 | 11,874   |                             |
|                 |                       |                                        | 25 to 40, 7,947                 | 9,178    |                             |
|                 |                       |                                        | 40 to 60, 8,366                 | 9,064    |                             |
|                 |                       |                                        | 60 to 80, 3,268                 | 3,264    |                             |
|                 |                       |                                        | 80 to 100, 318                  | 278      |                             |
|                 |                       |                                        | 38,202                          | 39,474   |                             |
|                 |                       |                                        | Born in 1810, 1,155             | 1,120    |                             |
|                 |                       |                                        | Died in ditto, 982              | 968      |                             |
|                 |                       |                                        | Increase of population, - - 173 | 152      |                             |

A. D. 1812.

*Recapitulation.*

| Provinces.      | Patriarchates. | Bishopricks. | Priorates. | Liberties of Convents. | Parishes. | Inhabited houses. | Inhabitants. |
|-----------------|----------------|--------------|------------|------------------------|-----------|-------------------|--------------|
| ESTREMADURA.    | 1              | 1            | 2          |                        | 437       | 149,361           | 573,993      |
| BEIRA.          |                | 7            |            | 1                      | 1,227     | 223,793           | 880,602      |
| MINHO.          |                | 2            |            | 1                      | 1,638     | 246,329           | 953,962      |
| ALENTEJO.       |                | 4            |            |                        | 347       | 80,932            | 288,200      |
| ALGARVE.        |                | 1            |            |                        | 70        | 28,214            | 102,158      |
| TRAS OS MONTES. |                | 1            |            |                        | 334       | 20,900            | 77,676       |
|                 | 1              | 16           | 2          | 2                      | 4,053     | 749,529           | 2,876,591    |



A. D. 1812.

According to the foregoing Table, the total number of inhabitants in Portugal, at the beginning of the last year, was only two millions, eight hundred and seventy-six thousand, five hundred and ninety-one. Of that number, one million, three hundred and ninety-seven thousand, were males, and one million, four hundred and seventy-nine thousand, five hundred and ninety-one, were females. The number of births within the year amounted to 50,109 males, and 47,427 females, making a total of 97,536; while the deaths in the same period amounted only to 89,567, leaving a surplus of 7,969 in favour of the population of that year; yet, if a return which was published by General Gomes Freire in 1806 is at all near the truth, the population of Portugal has decreased in the last six years nearly half a million. Many circumstances have contributed to produce this certainly very great diminution in the number of the inhabitants. I shall mention, *1st*, The emigration of the Royal Family to Brazils. Many thousands left their country at that period, never to return to it. *2dly*, About twelve or sixteen thousand men were sent to France by General Junot, while he was in possession of the country. *3dly*, The continuance of the war for four years; and, *lastly*, the pestilence introduced by the French army, and the ravages which it pro-



duced in that country in the latter end of 1810, <sup>A.D. 1812.</sup> and beginning of 1811. But, while I mention these as the principal causes, I cannot pass over in silence the horrid abuses which were committed by the officers of the recruiting service, in raising the necessary levies in 1809. The interests of the state, the feelings or justice of individuals, were equally neglected by many of these monsters; and revenge or personal gain appeared to be the only principle by which they were guided. Those only who could bribe highest were permitted to escape from being soldiers, while the poor wretches who could not bribe, however unfit or incapable of becoming soldiers, were hunted from place to place, or kept shut up in prisons, until they were worn out, or fell a sacrifice to the pestilence, which their being shut up in loathsome and damp dungeons was sure to generate. I have known men quite lame and decrepid, actually marched for more than 300 miles to the general depôt, at an immense expense to the nation; while others, in the last stage of disease, have only arrived to be relieved from their oppression and their miseries by death. I scarcely exaggerate when I say, that 100,000 individuals have been lost to the country during the present war, through the wilful neglect and mismanagement of the Captain-majors and their hirelings.



A. D. 1812.

But it certainly affords some consolation to those who have survived that age of horror and corruption, to know, that the vigilance of the present government, and of the Commander-in-chief, has brought the greater part of these villains to condign punishment. They have suffered the punishment due to their crimes ; and it is hoped, that the enlightened and liberal views which the protracted stay of the British army in Portugal has introduced among the great body of the people, however much to be regretted in other respects, will tend also to eradicate many abuses, which even the most vigilant government could not otherwise overturn.

The Prince Regent has lately published some wise and salutary laws for preserving and increasing the population of the kingdom, and Marshal Beresford has laid down a system of regulations for the guidance of the recruiting officers in levying, as well as in marching the recruits to the depôts ; and although little increase can be expected during the continuance of the present war, yet, if these laws and regulations are attended to, they will certainly prevent any great diminution. The Governors of Portugal are now busily employed in inquiring into the various abuses in the establishments for the education and support of orphans, which are scattered over the whole face



of the country, and in correcting these abuses ; <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup>  
and when the regulations now adopted begin to  
take effect, they will have a powerful influence  
on the state of the population.

I beg leave to call the attention of the reader to the healthiness of the climate of Portugal, as exhibited in the Table of Population. It appears that there were not less than 252 individuals above 100 years of age at the beginning of last year ; and if we may judge from the same criterion, Estremadura and Minho are the most healthy provinces, and Alentejo the least so. The deaths in the latter province exceeded the births in 1810 by 3,436. But, from the greater number of births than deaths in every other province, it appears evident that the population would rapidly increase, if peace was restored to the country ; and, under the fostering care of an almost idolized Sovereign, the nation would soon rise with renewed vigour to its former place in the scale of Europe.

The people of Portugal have never been so blindly superstitious as the inhabitants of Spain. Their commercial intercourse with the world was long most extensive, and men of true science and worth were to be found among them for centuries after HENRY, Duke of Viseu, had been numbered with his ancestors. The Court of the Inquisition was not established in the former kingdom till after



A.D. 1812. it had ruled in the latter for nearly two centuries<sup>1</sup>.

Yet, three years ago, it was no uncommon thing to hear the peasantry exclaim, when a British regiment passed through their village, "O God! what a pity such fine men should be without souls!" Our constant and familiar intercourse with them, however, has wrought a wonderful change in their opinions with regard to us; and certainly there never was a body of people more united, or more sincerely attached to the British, than the Portuguese; but I am sorry to add, that their kindness and friendship is often not requited by us as it ought.

---

#### *State of Agriculture in Portugal.*

IN ancient times, Lusitania was visited by the neighbouring nations, not more on account of the gold and silver which its mountains contained, than on account of the abundance of every article necessary for the existence as well as comfort of mankind which it produced. The Greeks, the Carthagenians, and the Romans, and even the northern nations of Europe, were supplied



with grain of every kind, fruits, wine, oil, and <sup>A.D. 1812.</sup> honey, and with silk, wool, lint, wood, and cattle, from Portugal.—The climate and the soil are certainly favourable for the production of all these articles, though, if we except wine and fruit, few of them are now cultivated in the country. The warlike ancestors of the present inhabitants of Portugal, who expelled the luxurious Moors from their country, were not, it is to be supposed, well calculated to become farmers; yet we find that, from the time of Count Henry in 1100, to that of Ferdinand in 1370, agriculture and the increase of population were objects of the first importance with Sovereigns of that period. Sanchus I. was so zealous in the cultivation of the country, and in encouraging population, that he was surnamed by his vassals the *Povoador*, a term which I am unable to translate, but which signifies not only a builder of towns, but also one who finds inhabitants for them when they are built; and Dennis, who was truly a great and a good King, esteemed it his highest boast to be called the *FARMER*, which procured for him the still higher title of “Father of his Country.” The cruel and bloody wars which had devastated the peninsula for centuries previous to his reign, had in a great measure destroyed the natural woods of Portugal; he was therefore at great pains to pre-



A. D. 1812. serve whatever remained, as well as to secure a further supply, by introducing trees from other countries. The immense pine-forest which runs along the coast for several leagues to the westward of Leiria, was planted in his reign, and this wood has now become the most abundant, as well as the most valuable, in the kingdom; and forests equally extensive, though not so ancient, are to be found throughout the whole country. During the reigns of Affonso IV. and Peter I. agriculture and population were both on the decline; yet in the reign of Ferdinand, who died in 1583, many foreign nations were supplied with wheat and other grain from Portugal; and Lisbon, Santarem, Abrantes, Coimbra, Elvas, and Estramoz, supplied the greater part of Europe with fine oil. The reign of John I. so glorious in a military point of view, was fatal to agriculture; and from that period we find it continually on the decline. Don Manuel was too much occupied with the commerce of the East to attend to agricultural improvements, and the spirit of enterprise which his voyages and discoveries induced, was most prejudicial to population.

JOHN III. who resembled his ancestor Dennis in many respects, was sensible of the fallen state of his kingdom, and anxious to further its internal improvement. Many of the conquests in A-



frica were abandoned, that the population of the <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> mother country might be increased ; but the evil was of too long standing to be easily eradicated. The country was covered with religious establishments, where celibacy was practised and enjoined ; and notwithstanding his wise and salutary laws, the population was but little augmented during his reign, and agriculture nothing improved. In the memorable reign of the young King Sebastian, various measures were adopted for draining the marshes about Santarem and Goli-gam, and directions given for embanking the Tagus throughout its course from Tancos to Sacavem ; but, as if to render null those wise measures for the improvement of the country, it was drained of both men and money to support his ruinous wars in Africa. During the period of sixty years which Portugal continued subject to the Kings of Spain, the peasantry were suffered to drag out a miserable existence ; and agriculture became in a manner entirely neglected. The restoration of the house of Braganza to the throne of their ancestors gave new vigour to the inhabitants ; but the continued warfare which followed that restoration prevented every species of improvement ; there was a want of hands to cultivate the land. When Joseph I. came to the throne, the population of Portugal was calculated



A.D. 1812. at two millions and a half, and the kingdom scarcely produced food for the half of that number. This Monarch was truly sensible of the wretched state of the people, and of the nation which he was called to govern. A stop was put to the accumulating orders of religious establishments. A plan was organized for the instruction of the youth of both sexes. A number of the greatest capitalists were recalled from America, and every encouragement given them to lay out their riches in the cultivation of the soil; while the extensive and often vexatious powers of the Lords of manors were restrained or annulled; but the inconstant and wavering mind of the Marquis of Pombal often frustrated the best of his plans for the improvement of agriculture, and seldom allowed any measure to be brought to perfection. The reign of her present Majesty is distinguished by the great attention which was paid to the most important of Pombal's schemes, and to the improvement of the roads and highways throughout the country. New turnpike roads were made from Lisbon to Santarem, to Caldas, and to Oporto; but the latter never reached further than Coimbra. These roads were finished in a very superior manner, and excellent stone bridges were thrown over the different rivers and rivulets; but they have never been repaired since they were made, and



consequently are in a very impassable state in many <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> places.

The cross roads are nothing more than foot-paths, along which beasts of burden only can pass; and in the rainy season, it is scarcely possible to travel with safety. During the last three years, the armies have improved many of the roads, and have even made others; but little improvement is to be expected, till peace once more dawn upon that unhappy country.

The farmers of Portugal follow the same undeviating course from year to year, in the cultivation of their land, and appear entirely ignorant, not only of the improvements, but even of the most common methods of husbandry in other countries. The same spot is tilled year after year, and appropriated to the same crop. Every kind of farm-labour is performed with oxen. The plough is a simple but coarse machine, made with the hatchet of three pieces of wood. In light soils, only two oxen are necessary to draw it; but in some of the provinces it is encumbered with two clumsy wheels, and then four, or sometimes six oxen, are yoked in one plough. The land is not ploughed in ridges as in this country; the furrows are laid all one way, and the mould-board, as well as the coulter, are moved at every turn. This answers very well in hilly farms, but



A. D. 1812. might be dispensed with in level fields, as this constant changing, however easy, must employ a considerable portion of the labourer's time.

The land is generally all tilled by the month of January, but the seed-time seldom ends before the month of March. Wheat, Indian corn, and rice, are sometimes sown in drills, but barley always in broadcast; and in the northern provinces, both Indian corn and wheat are sown in broadcast, as also rye, which is more cultivated than any other kind of grain in some parts of the province of Tras os Montes. The winter wheats are generally sown in October, and the summer in February or March. Barley is generally sown in March, and Indian corn in the beginning of April. The barley and rye harvest is finished by the end of June, and the wheat in July and August; the later crop in September; but the Indian corn harvest seldom begins before the first of October. The old scriptural method of treading out the corn still continues in use in many parts of Portugal. A circular spot of ground is chosen in a convenient part of the farm; it is excavated a little, and then floored either with stone or compost. The corn is carried to this spot, called the "*Eira*," and thrown into it, when, according to the size of the *Eira*, six or eight oxen or horses, muzzled and tied together, are driven round and



round the circle, until the grain is entirely separated from the straw. One man runs behind the poor cattle with a rod pointed with iron, to keep them on the move, while two or three are employed in tossing the straw with pitch-forks under their feet, that it may be sufficiently trod upon. The straw is then carefully separated from the grain and chaff, and the latter is separated afterwards by means of winnowing in the open air. In the more improved districts, the grain is thrashed out by instruments similar to the flail, called in Portuguese "*Malho*." The Indian corn plants, when ripe, are cut down and carried to the barn, called in Portugal "*Celleiro*," where the ears are carefully separated from the stalk, and exposed to the sun for some days, that the grain may be hardened; after which it is separated from the line either by the hand or by the "*Malho*." The grain is then exposed again to the sun for some days, before it is put into the large chests where it is kept. I am not able to state, with any degree of accuracy, the quantity of grain which Portugal produces; but certainly not one-tenth part of the arable land is tilled, and not one-fourth of what appears to have been cultivated in former times. In the provinces of Estremadura, Beira, and Alentejo, the principal food of the peasantry is the Indian corn bread.



A.D. 1812. Sometimes it is mixed with a little wheaten flour, which makes it a lighter and more healthy food. In the north, rye and barley bread is more common; and it is only in the principal cities, and among the higher classes, that wheaten bread is in common use. Potatoes are cultivated in some provinces, but not in any quantity, and are by no means relished by the inhabitants; and by far the greater part of what are used at Lisbon and Oporto are imported from Ireland. Rice is cultivated in Algarve in considerable quantity, and also on the banks of the Mondego, between Coimbra and the sea, where it produces a most abundant crop. French beans, called in Portugal "*Feijões*," are much cultivated, and form a principal part of the food of the inhabitants; and also the Lupin pea, which, when prepared in a particular manner, is by no means unpleasant to eat.

In the south of Portugal, the corn is ground by wind-mills. These mills are very small and simple in their construction, and are very numerous in different parts of the country. The machinery is confined in a small wooden frame, (about twice the size of a sentry-box in this country), which is made to run upon wheels, so as to turn round with the changes of wind. The arms are very slight, and are forced round by means of triangular sails which are attached to them.



In the north, water-mills are more in use. To <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup>  
such of my readers as have seen the ancient wa-  
ter-mills in the Western Highlands of Scotland,  
I have only to observe, that the Portuguese wa-  
ter-mills are made exactly in the same manner;  
but, for the information of those who have not  
seen such rude machines, I have to state, that  
they consist of a straight pole, of considerable  
strength, which is generally the height of the  
building; the under end is furnished with an iron  
spindle, which runs in a groove in a stone placed  
at the bottom of the water-course, while the up-  
per end is kept steady by passing through a beam  
at the roof of the house. At about a foot from  
the under end of this pole, a number of spokes  
are inserted, and are slightly curved or bent in-  
wards, so that the water falling upon these spokes  
causes the pole to go round. This pole passes  
through the under mill-stone, which is fixed, but  
is made to catch the upper one, and move it  
round with it. A slight wooden frame, which  
covers the mill-stones, and a small box in which  
the grain is kept, and from which it passes into  
the opening in the upper mill-stone, are the only  
remaining parts of the machine.

Few countries in the world are more adapted  
for agriculture, yet the cultivation of the VINE,  
the OLIVE, the FIG, and other fruit-trees, has



A.D. 1812. long been the principal support of the Portuguese, and their produce now constitutes the greater part of the riches of the nation. Agriculture, however, might be improved and increased tenfold, without injuring the cultivation of either the vines or olives. The hills or mountains are generally preferred for the culture of the vine, where, in fact, nothing else would answer so well, and the land may often be tilled among the olive plantations without injuring the trees. In the *Tras os Montes*, it is not uncommon to see corn growing among the vines.

When the hills are steep, the earth is supported by stone walls, and forms a succession of terraces from the base to the summit. In the province of *Minho*, trees are planted in the vineyards for the purpose of giving support to the tendrils of the vine; but in the other provinces the vines are cut short, and the tendrils, during the season, are supported by poles stuck in the field for that purpose. In the beginning of January, the husbandmen are busied in pruning the vines. They generally lop off every shoot of the last year except one, and of this they only leave about a foot and a half, which they double down and keep in that position by means of a bit of thread or dried rush. The prunings are carefully removed from the field, and the next process is to dig up the



surface of the ground, which they do with a large hoe. This operation not only checks the growth of weeds, but also serves to retain a greater quantity of moisture about the roots of the vine. A. D. 1812.

The third process is lopping off the superfluous branches, or bunches of grapes, when they are in bloom, or shortly after, in order that the proper quantity which the vine can bear may come to perfection; and when the grapes begin to ripen, it is often necessary to introduce additional supports, and to remove a part of the leaves; that the sun may penetrate the hanging branches. About the middle of September, the grapes begin to ripen, but are seldom gathered before the end of that month, or beginning of October. In the level countries, they are carried to the press, which is a large square vat, with a lid to fit exactly, and by means of a heavy beam and screw, (a most clumsy apparatus), the juice is separated from the husks. In Upper Douro, this process is performed by treading; and if the wine is for exportation, the juice is allowed to stand with the husks in it for three or four days, that it may acquire a deep colour; if for home-consumption, it only stands for twenty-four hours. This juice, whether from the press or treading-vats, is called Must, and is now put into large casks; and if the wine is intended for exportation, a considerable



A. D. 1812. quantity of brandy is added. And after it has undergone the vinous fermentation, the casks are closely shut up, and kept so for nearly two months. If the wine is for the British market, it receives an additional quantity of brandy on being drawn off from these casks, and put into the proper exporting pipes.—The cultivation of the vine is said to have been prejudicial to the other branches of husbandry in the northern districts, when it became universal about 1720. This is somewhat probable, as they require much less labour, and generally produce more than an ordinary crop of grain.

It was not till the reign of Queen Anne, that the Portuguese wine became known and esteemed in this country, or that any quantity of it was imported; but since that period, the quantity imported has rapidly increased. In 1727, a British factory was established in Oporto, for the purpose of exporting wines from that country to this; but the means which they used to adulterate the wine, and the manner in which they mixed the good and the bad together, so as to be able to sell it at a low price, tended to bring the whole into such disrepute, that in 1753, the quantity exported for the English market was reduced two-thirds of what it had formerly been. Under these circumstances (which the members of the factory had



in a great measure produced) a letter was address- <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup>  
ed to their agents in the wine country in 1754, in  
which they stated, “ That formerly the reputa-  
tion of the Oporto wines was very great, but that  
it had now become so bad, that not only the  
wines of other countries, but every kind of li-  
quor, were preferred to it; and that, notwith-  
standing the increase of the population in Great  
Britain, the quantity of Port wine exported to  
that country had decreased more than a third,  
and was still upon the decline.” This represen-  
tation was answered by the Portuguese farmers;  
and the English merchants were told, “ that *they*  
only were to blame; that, in the first instance,  
they had taught the farmers to adulterate the  
wine, and latterly they had compelled them to  
have recourse to such adulterations, by refusing  
to give a fair price for it when brought to the  
market.” It was in consequence of this dispute,  
and when the wine trade appeared to be fast has-  
tening to ruin, that the Wine Company of the Up-  
per Douro was established by King Joseph in 1756,  
for the purpose of preserving the purity of the  
wines that were to be exported, so that their re-  
putation might be preserved in foreign countries.  
This company is authorised to determine the  
districts where the wine for exportation is to be  
manufactured, and to prevent its being mixed



A. D. 1812. with the wines from any other district, or with any foreign substance. At present, no wine can be sold in the Upper Douro, until it has been proved by the inspectors of the company, who fix the price at which it is to be sold; and none can be sold for exportation, unless it is declared of the proper quality by the same inspectors. The funds of the company ought to be expended partly in the purchase and exportation of wine, and partly in making loans to the poorer farmers at 3 per cent., so as to enable them to cultivate their farms with every advantage. In 1756, the quantity of Port wine imported into Great Britain was 12,211 pipes; in 1801, it amounted to 66,629 pipes; and in 1810, notwithstanding the circumstances of the times, 42,115 pipes were imported. This company has certainly tended to preserve the quality of the wine, and added much to the prosperity of Portugal; but it is said to have been detrimental also, in preventing that emulation which is the consequence of a free trade, in keeping down the prices, and in preventing an extension of cultivation beyond what it was at the time of its being established. By the last treaty of commerce with this country, the extinction of any exclusive privileges is expressly stipulated; and I understand, that at this moment the privileges of the Wine



Company are under the consideration of the Bri-<sup>A. D. 1812.</sup>  
tish and Portuguese governments. 

The cultivation and manufacture of olive oil is another article of great importance in Portugal, but the quantity manufactured is much diminished, and, unfortunately, is still decreasing. Many millions of olive-trees have been destroyed during the present war; and when it is known that each full-bearing tree at this moment is worth £. 20 Sterling, some idea may be formed of the loss which the nation has suffered in this article alone. In old times, I have already remarked, the greater part of Europe was supplied with oil from Portugal; but now, I believe, very little, if any, is exported.

The olive-tree is propagated with great facility, and the common method is from slips, though it is sometimes raised from the seed, and frequently by ingrafting on the wild olive. The sets or slips are generally cut off from the old trees in autumn, and are kept in moist earth through the winter, and then planted in the months of February and March. The tree seldom bears till it is fifteen or sixteen years old.

The olives are ripe in the months of December and January, at which time one or two men get up into the tree, and with long poles beat them off the branches, while the women and children



A.D.1812. are employed in picking them up from the ground.

It is a tedious operation, and employs the whole population of the country for nearly two months. When the whole of the harvest is reaped, they are carried to the bruising-mill, of which there is generally only one on each estate. If the farmer wishes to have very fine oil, the olives are bruised, and the oil pressed out, immediately on their being gathered from the tree; but if he wishes for quantity only, they are kept for some time in large heaps, with a quantity of salt strewed among them. The first operation is to bruise the olives in a mill similar to that used by the tanners in this country for the bruising of bark, and which reduces the whole to a pulpy mass. They are then put into circular bags, which are made of a kind of dried rush, and these bags are piled one above another under the press to a considerable height. Boiling water is poured upon this pile for a considerable time, and this water, which is collected in a trough, carries off the oil from the bruised olives. The trough in which the water and oil are first collected is pretty large, and is connected with a smaller one, into which the oil passes when it rises to a certain height, while the warm water is let off by a stop-cock from the bottom of the large trough; and it is only necessary to prevent its rising to the pipe by



which the oil is carried off. As soon as it is observed that no more oil comes off with the boiling water, a large beam is allowed to fall upon the pile of bags, and the pressure is increased by means of stones and heavy weights hung at the end of this beam. The olives undergo this operation twice, and sometimes thrice, in order that as little as possible of their oil may escape. The oil is drawn off from the small trough in which it is collected, into bags made of swine-skin, in which it is kept, and in which it is transported on mules or asses from one part of the country to another. A.D. 1812.

Every kind of fruit is produced in Portugal in great abundance, and in the highest perfection, but particularly oranges and figs, which continue to be exported from Algarve, from Lisbon, and from Oporto. The quantity of figs exported from Algarve is very considerable, and the culture of the fig-tree is an object of some importance. This tree, which is almost always propagated from layers, is contented with a bad soil, provided it be dry; and very often it grows on naked rocks or bare walls, where scarcely any earth is to be found. To make the fruit ripen sooner, the farmers have recourse to "*caprification*;" for this purpose, an useless variety of the fig-tree, which abound with an insect of the gnat kind,



A. D. 1812. is cultivated. By allowing these insects to perforate the fruit, it is ripened sooner and better than it could otherwise be done, as the figs are apt to fall from the tree before they come to maturity. When the fruit has advanced to a certain state of maturity, the branches are broken off from the useless tree which breeds the insects, and hung upon that which they wish to "*caprifigate*," and the gnats, by perforating the figs, give vent to the sap, and stimulate its effusion, thereby not only preventing the falling of the fruit, but rendering it sweeter and better flavoured.

When the figs are gathered from the tree, they are collected together in large heaps upon a raised platform, and a syrup is allowed to drain off from them, which is used in making brandy. They are then spread out in the sun for some days, and afterwards pressed into small round bags, or baskets, made of the palm leaf, in which they are exported.

The Spanish reed (*arundo donax*) is cultivated in various parts of Algarve; and in ancient times the kermes (*coccus ilicis*) was an article of importance, and considerable quantities were exported from this kingdom; but now it is scarcely known in the country.



*State of the Fisheries and Commerce of Portugal.*

IN 1353, the inhabitants of Lisbon had per-<sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> mission from our Henry III. to fish off the coast of Brittany, and for many centuries the sea-port towns in the south of Portugal were extensively engaged in this trade; but, like every other branch of trade in the nation, it fell into decay during the reign of the Philips, and has long ceased to exist. At present there is no fishing establishment throughout the whole extent of the kingdom, that deserves particular mention as such. The fishermen of St Ubes, Alcaçer de Sal, and Sinos, do little more than supply their own towns, and send a small quantity to the Lisbon market; and even the expensive and royal establishments at Villa Real in Algarve, which owed their origin to the ever-varying mind of POMBAL, are now in ruins; and the death-like stillness which reigns in that town, will, I fear, long continue a memento of the unwise measures of that minister, who, in many establishments as well as this, seemed to drive, nay to force the prosperity of the country at the point of the sword, without relaxing in any of the exorbitant duties which



A.D. 1812. were levied upon the people. The village of Monte Gordo, which had risen without force or favour to a great size, and employed nearly 150 smacks in the fishing-trade, was laid in ashes by order of Pombal, and the inhabitants compelled to settle in Villa Real; but the event has shewn how little that great man, with all his abilities, understood human nature. As fish, however, forms the principal part of the food of the lower classes in Portugal, the inhabitants of the sea-coast are wholly occupied in procuring it for the inland consumption. The market of Lisbon is at all times well supplied; and even in the provincial inland towns, good fresh fish is to be met with occasionally. The most common kinds are the *Sardinha*, a species of the pilchard or sprat, which is very abundant on the coast at particular times; the *Pescada*, a non-descript species of *Gadus*, which is fished for off the coast, in the same manner as cod is fished for on the banks of Newfoundland; turbot, sole, red and white gurnet, skate, and mackarel, are very common, as also the *John Dorrie* and *Parrot Fish*. The *Savel* (*clupea alosa*) is caught in the Tagus in great quantities in the months of February and March; and the lampreys of the Mondego have long been considered a choice dainty by epicures. There is a species of the *clupea* very often taken with the sardinhas,



which resembles the common herring in appearance; but it is not much relished, as it is a very coarse unsavoury fish. The dog-fish, and what they call the cat-fish, are very abundant on the coast, as also boneta's and sword-fish. Trout is found in some of the mountain-streams in the north, but is not common; and I believe the Minho is the only river in the kingdom in which the salmon is found. The sardinha fishery is an object of considerable importance, and might be made a source of much wealth to the people engaged in it, and also to the nation. If the quantity taken was equal to the home-consumption, the importation of Bacalhaõ from England and America would be diminished. At present, near a million of money is drawn from the kingdom annually for dried salt fish imported, while I am convinced that one half, if not two-thirds, of that sum might be saved, if the fisheries on the coast were properly encouraged.

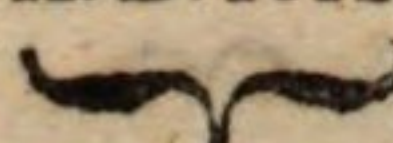
When the commerce of Great Britain was yet in its infancy, the ships of Portugal covered the ocean, and Europe was indebted, in a great measure, to that nation for the discovery of the New World, and for the luxuries of the East. But now, how changed the scene! Britain reigns triumphant on the main, and her commerce extends to every part of the habitable globe, while the



A. D. 1812. commerce of Portugal is confined almost to her few remaining colonies;—and that flag which could terrify into subjection the greatest monarchs of Hindostan, now scarcely waves in the Indian ocean. Goa and Macao are all that remain of the once extensive commercial establishments in India, and the whole of the Portuguese East India and China trade is confined to one or two ships, which sail from Lisbon.

For a long time past the principal commerce of Portugal has been confined to the productions of her colonies in South America. These productions were brought to Lisbon in the first instance, (as no foreign power was allowed to export from the Brazils), and from thence they were distributed throughout the world. This trade was therefore a source of considerable wealth to the country, and the Lisbon merchants engaged in the Brazil trade, are among the most opulent in Europe.—When speaking of the agriculture of the country, I have mentioned the principal articles of export from Portugal. These are wine, ardent spirits, fruit, and salt; a small quantity of oil and cork may be included also in the list. From Brazil the principal articles of export are cotton, coffee, cocoa, hides, rice, sugar, tallow, and dye-stuffs. Madeira and the western islands



export nearly the same products as the mother A. D. 1812.  
country. 

The Table, No. I. shews the quantity of wine exported from Oporto during the last eighteen years, and the reader will observe how great a proportion of that quantity came to Great Britain. The Table No. II. shews the real amount of the wine and ardent spirits exported to this country for ten years, viz. from 1800 to 1809, and also the value of our exports to Portugal; from which it appears, that the balance was against Great Britain. The Table, No. III. shews the amount of the duties paid upon dried salt fish imported from Newfoundland for the ten years ending 31st December 1809; and as this article is paid for chiefly in specie, the balance is greatly against Portugal. In the Table, No. IV. I have given a return of the different articles of provision imported into Lisbon for the year ending the 31st January 1812, and which were sold on board ship in the Tagus, with the sums paid for each article, clear of the duties and other expences. I have also added the total sum paid at the out-ports for the same period. A great proportion of the grain imported into Lisbon has been on account of the British army: and as that importation has been chiefly from America, with whom for some time past we have had no corresponding trade,



A. D. 1812. the balance has been very great against this country; and the cash which it has been necessary to send to Portugal, to pay for American produce, has been one cause of the commercial distress lately felt in this country. For the last three years the expenditure has been constant and very considerable, without any return whatever, as the money carried to America, as well as the greatest part of that spent in Portugal, has been withdrawn completely from circulation, at least in this country.

The importation and sale of tobacco and soap belongs to the crown, as also several of the products of the Brazils and the Cape Verd Islands. And the exportation of wine from Oporto, as I have observed in another part of this Chapter, is vested in the Company of the Upper Douro.

There are very few manufactures of any extent in Portugal, and even these few were almost all carried on by strangers. A Frenchman erected a pretty extensive cotton mill at Thomar, which was a very profitable concern for many years, and is still carried on to a small extent. The spinning machinery was made by an Englishman, who is now employed at Lisbon in constructing machinery of the same kind, to be sent to Brazils. At Marinha, near Leiria, a gentleman from Devonshire has a very extensive glass manufactory, which supplies



the whole of Portugal and the colonies. Hats are <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> manufactured at Braga, and broad cloth, in considerable quantity, at Portalegre. Thread lace is made at Vianna, in the province of Minho, and a kind of silk shawls are manufactured in great perfection in Lisbon. Broad cloth used formerly to be manufactured at Covelham, and other towns in the Lower Beira, but I believe very little, if any, is made there at present. There is a small manufactory of coarse pottery at Coimbra, and the Government has established considerable iron-works at Foz d'Algé.

At one period of Pombal's ministry, every encouragement was given to the silk manufactures, and the silk-worm was cultivated with great care and attention. At present the greater part of the silk manufactured in the country is imported from Italy, as the propagation of the silk-worm is entirely neglected.

A considerable quantity of linen cloth is still brought to the Lamego market, but it is extremely coarse, and by no means well bleached. Formerly there was an establishment for bleaching with the oxymuriatic at Leiria, but it is now in ruins.



## No. I.

A.D. 1812.

*A general Return of the total quantity of Wine in Pipes, shipped at Oporto, from 1st January 1793, to 31st December 1811.*

| Years. | Number of pipes shipped for Eng-land. | Number of pipes shipped for Ire-land. | Number of pipes shipped for Ame-rica. | Number of pipes shipped for diffe-rent ports in the North and Baltic. | Number of pipes shipped for Brazil and other Portu-guese colonies. | Number of pipes shipped for Lis-bon. | Total number of pipes shipped in each year. |
|--------|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| 1793.  | 25,089 $\frac{3}{4}$                  | 4,414 $\frac{3}{4}$                   | 1                                     | 1,289                                                                 | 101 $\frac{3}{4}$                                                  | 267 $\frac{1}{2}$                    | 31,113 $\frac{1}{2}$                        |
| 1794.  | 40,683 $\frac{1}{4}$                  | 8,380 $\frac{1}{4}$                   | 43 $\frac{3}{4}$                      | 2,994 $\frac{1}{4}$                                                   | 151 $\frac{3}{4}$                                                  | 401 $\frac{3}{4}$                    | 52,655 $\frac{1}{2}$                        |
| 1795.  | 41,726 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 8,254 $\frac{3}{4}$                   | 2                                     | 2,871 $\frac{1}{4}$                                                   | 48 $\frac{3}{4}$                                                   | 488 $\frac{3}{4}$                    | 53,392                                      |
| 1796.  | 24,968 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 10,795 $\frac{1}{4}$                  | 6                                     | 2,082 $\frac{1}{4}$                                                   | 29 $\frac{1}{2}$                                                   | 702 $\frac{1}{2}$                    | 38,584                                      |
| 1797.  | 16,672 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 2,588 $\frac{3}{4}$                   | 7                                     | 5,978                                                                 | 33 $\frac{1}{2}$                                                   | 3,477 $\frac{3}{4}$                  | 28,757 $\frac{1}{2}$                        |
| 1798.  | 39,931 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 11,490 $\frac{1}{4}$                  | 1                                     | 6,524                                                                 | 17 $\frac{3}{4}$                                                   | 6,437 $\frac{1}{4}$                  | 64,401 $\frac{3}{4}$                        |
| 1799.  | 36,219 $\frac{1}{4}$                  | 12,411 $\frac{1}{4}$                  | 3                                     | 4,748                                                                 | 21 $\frac{1}{4}$                                                   | 3,296 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 56,699 $\frac{1}{2}$                        |
| 1800.  | 43,825 $\frac{3}{4}$                  | 8,456 $\frac{1}{4}$                   |                                       | 2,004 $\frac{1}{2}$                                                   | 324                                                                | 1,285 $\frac{3}{4}$                  | 55,896 $\frac{1}{4}$                        |
| 1801.  | 50,787 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 7,329 $\frac{1}{4}$                   | 336                                   | 5,358                                                                 | 1,285                                                              | 1,532 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 66,628 $\frac{3}{4}$                        |
| 1802.  | 28,635 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 6,591 $\frac{1}{4}$                   | 25 $\frac{1}{2}$                      | 2,149                                                                 | 117 $\frac{3}{4}$                                                  | 1,113 $\frac{1}{4}$                  | 38,632 $\frac{1}{2}$                        |
| 1803.  | 44,332 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 8,076                                 | 271 $\frac{1}{2}$                     | 334                                                                   | 562                                                                | 773 $\frac{1}{2}$                    | 54,350                                      |
| 1804.  | 19,565 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 7,486 $\frac{1}{2}$                   | 303 $\frac{1}{2}$                     | 1,709                                                                 | 79                                                                 | 708                                  | 29,851                                      |
| 1805.  | 28,231 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 4,518 $\frac{1}{2}$                   | 142                                   | 2,440                                                                 | 135 $\frac{1}{2}$                                                  | 850                                  | 36,320 $\frac{1}{2}$                        |
| 1806.  | 31,260                                | 6,862                                 | 533 $\frac{1}{2}$                     | 370 $\frac{1}{2}$                                                     | 109                                                                | 844                                  | 39,984                                      |
| 1807.  |                                       |                                       |                                       |                                                                       |                                                                    |                                      | 48,743                                      |
| 1808.  |                                       |                                       |                                       |                                                                       |                                                                    |                                      | 35,962                                      |
| 1810.  | 40,763                                |                                       |                                       | 5,903 $\frac{3}{4}$                                                   |                                                                    |                                      | 41,353 $\frac{3}{4}$                        |
| 1811.  | 18,536                                |                                       |                                       |                                                                       |                                                                    |                                      | 18,538                                      |
|        | 531,220 $\frac{3}{4}$                 | 107,655                               | 1,673 $\frac{1}{2}$                   | 41,392 $\frac{1}{2}$                                                  | 3,016 $\frac{1}{2}$                                                | 22179 $\frac{1}{2}$                  | 791,863                                     |



## No. II.

*A General Return of the amount of Wine imported from Portugal, and of British Manufactures exported to that Kingdom, for the ten years ending 31st December 1809.* A. D. 1812.

| Amount of wine and ardent spirits imported from Portugal, specifying the sum for each year. | Years. | Amount of British manufactures exported to Portugal, specifying the sum for each year. |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| £. 748,822 15 6                                                                             | 1800.  | £. 1,094,326 0 7                                                                       |
| 1,582,584 11 0                                                                              | 1801.  | 612,713 5 0                                                                            |
| 993,380 0 0                                                                                 | 1802.  | 851,905 4 0                                                                            |
| 1,611,538 17 0                                                                              | 1803.  | 604,764 11 0                                                                           |
| 825,047 10 0                                                                                | 1804.  | 436,598 14 0                                                                           |
| 1,051,314 16 0                                                                              | 1805.  | 566,252 1 0                                                                            |
| 1,185,908 17 0                                                                              | 1806.  | 505,863 15 0                                                                           |
| 1,498,138 1 0                                                                               | 1807.  | 598,553 14 0                                                                           |
| 28,748 11 0                                                                                 | 1808.  | 133,271 12 0                                                                           |
| 1,334,209 13 0                                                                              | 1809.  | 325,599 7 0                                                                            |
| £. 10,059,793 11 6                                                                          |        | £. 5,819,955 8 0                                                                       |

Balance in favour of Portugal, £. 5,039,955 8 0

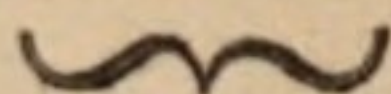
## No. III.

*A Return of the Amount of the Duties paid on Salt Fish imported into Lisbon from Newfoundland, for the ten years ending 31st December 1809, being 23 per cent. on the Selling Price.*

| Years. | Amount of the duty in each year. | Total amount for the ten years. |
|--------|----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1800.  | £. 42,497 3 6                    | £. 361,093 2 6                  |
| 1801.  | 25,286 12 0                      |                                 |
| 1802.  | 52,460 4 0                       |                                 |
| 1803.  | 42,725 2 6                       |                                 |
| 1804.  | 37,435 1 0                       |                                 |
| 1805.  | 44,618 13 6                      |                                 |
| 1806.  | 38,877 8 6                       |                                 |
| 1807.  | 29,399 11 6                      |                                 |
| 1808.  | 20,583 9 0                       |                                 |
| 1809.  | 27,209 17 0                      |                                 |



A. D. 1812.



## No. IV.

*A Return of the Quantity of Grain and other Articles of Provision sold on board Ship in the Tagus, with the Sums paid for each Article, clear of the Duties and other Expences, between 1st February 1811 and 31st January 1812.*

|                       |        |         |    |           |              |    |   |
|-----------------------|--------|---------|----|-----------|--------------|----|---|
| Wheat,                | 58,115 | Moios * | 16 | Alqueirs, | £. 1,016,747 | 15 | 0 |
| Indian Corn,          | 70,542 | do.     | 4  | do.       | 940,560      | 18 | 0 |
| Barley,               | 32,023 | do.     | 23 | do.       | 373,593      | 12 | 0 |
| Rye,                  | 5,580  | do.     | 30 | do.       | 55,805       | 0  | 0 |
| Oats, .               | 25,316 | do.     | 28 | do.       | 173,426      | 10 | 0 |
| French Beans,         | 2,628  | do.     | 16 | do.       | 50,330       | 9  | 0 |
| Pease,                | 164    | do.     | 45 | do.       | 3,295        | 0  | 0 |
| Potatoes,             | 3,450  | do.     |    |           | 20,696       | 18 | 0 |
| Kidney Beans,         | 210    | do.     |    |           | 4,211        | 14 | 0 |
| Common do.            | 2,064  | do.     |    |           | 24,087       | 15 | 0 |
| Monks do.             | 93     | do.     |    |           | 1,395        | 0  | 0 |
| Total paid for grain, |        |         |    |           | £. 2,672,150 | 11 | 0 |

\* A Moio contains 60 Alqueirs,

An Alqueir is equal to a Winchester Bushel.

A Quintal is about 105 lbs.

An Arroba is 32 lbs.



|                                    |           |  |              |    |   |             |
|------------------------------------|-----------|--|--------------|----|---|-------------|
| Dried Salt Fish, 185,302 Quintals, |           |  | £. 246,410   | 0  | 0 | A. D. 1812. |
| Ditto Pork, 859 do.                |           |  | 7,053        | 0  | 0 |             |
| Bacon Hams, 6,048 do.              | 1 Arroba, |  | 55,149       | 0  | 0 |             |
| Cheese, 3,425 do.                  | 3 do.     |  | 29,942       | 6  | 0 |             |
| Biscuit, 22,136 do.                | 2 do.     |  | 64,657       | 0  | 0 |             |
| Rice, 226,544 do.                  |           |  | 402,744      | 10 | 0 |             |
| Figs, 3 do.                        | 3 do.     |  | 41           | 13 | 0 |             |
| Tunny Fish, 1,210 do.              |           |  | 2,690        | 0  | 0 |             |
| Pare do. 600 do.                   |           |  | 3,200        | 0  | 0 |             |
| Small do. 20 do.                   |           |  | 21           | 3  | 0 |             |
| Flour, 605,948 Barrels,            |           |  | 2,051,780    | 0  | 0 |             |
| Butter, 89,616 do.                 |           |  | 350,928      | 0  | 0 |             |
| Salt Beef, 17,073 do.              |           |  | 67,107       | 0  | 0 |             |
| Salmon, 305 do.                    |           |  | 610          | 0  | 0 |             |
| Herrings, 1,349 do.                |           |  | 2,700        | 0  | 0 |             |
| Total paid for sundries,           |           |  | £. 3,285,033 | 12 | 0 |             |

|                                    |              |  |              |    |   |  |
|------------------------------------|--------------|--|--------------|----|---|--|
| Wine, 34,438 Pipes,                |              |  | £. 784,002   | 0  | 0 |  |
| Vinegar, 163 do.                   |              |  | 2,300        | 0  | 0 |  |
| Olive Oil, 7,379 $\frac{3}{4}$ do. |              |  | 201,300      | 0  | 0 |  |
| Ardent Spirits, 17,075 do.         |              |  | 691,470      | 11 | 0 |  |
| Porter, 972 do.                    |              |  | 19,443       | 0  | 0 |  |
| Gin, 127 do.                       | 483 Barrels, |  | 14,700       | 0  | 0 |  |
| Fish Oil, 81 do.                   |              |  | 2,430        | 0  | 0 |  |
| Bullocks, 1,647                    |              |  | 18,300       | 0  | 0 |  |
| Raisins, 3,667 Chests,             |              |  | 225,450      | 0  | 0 |  |
| Fowls, 270                         |              |  | 45           | 0  | 0 |  |
| Eggs, 5,200 Dozens,                |              |  | 346          | 14 | 0 |  |
| Total for Wine, Spirits, &c.       |              |  | £. 1,959,787 | 5  | 0 |  |

Grand Total of Money paid for Grain and Provisions imported during the year, including £. 2,423,696 paid at the outports, £. 10,340,665 8 0



*State of Literature and Literary Societies.*

A. D. 1812.

LITERATURE was at a much lower ebb in Portugal some years ago than at present, and the sciences certainly owe a great deal to the Marquis of Pombal. Previous to his time, an author had to submit his works, both before and after they were printed, to the examination and censure of a great number of tribunals; and, what was still worse, these tribunals were almost all connected with the Inquisition, and composed of clergymen. Pombal conferred the office of censor upon a Board, which included some of the lay members of the government, and which was called "The Royal Board for the general examination and censure of Books," and every work, when printed, bore on the title-page, that it was published with the permission of that Board. This Board, however, has been set aside, and the office of censor is now performed by the Board of Privy Council, "Meza de desembargo do Paço;" and the only real difficulty in publishing books is the want of purchasers, that is, if they relate to the arts and sciences, or history; politics, of course, are out of the question.

For many years past, the government has given

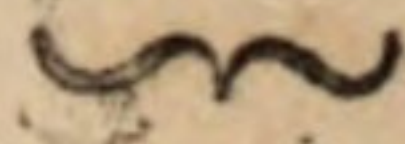


every possible encouragement to scientific pur-<sup>A. D. 1812.</sup>  
suits, and the principal works of philosophy, na-  
tural history, chemistry, rural economy, &c. which  
have been published during the last century, have  
been translated into Portuguese at the expense of  
the state; and young men have been sent to the  
different Universities on the Continent, and in  
Great Britain, to acquire a knowledge of the  
sciences taught at these schools.

Only two newspapers are published in Lisbon  
at present, the "Gazette," a daily paper, and  
the "Telegraph," which is published three times  
a-week. The Gazette contains very few observa-  
tions beyond the dry detail of passing events;  
but the Telegraph is written with great spirit. A  
weekly paper, called the "Minerva Lusitana,"  
was published for some time at Coimbra, but it is  
now discontinued. When I left Lisbon in May  
last, the first Number of the Coimbra Review, a  
monthly publication, had just come out. One of  
the French papers published in London, the  
"Courier de Londres," was translated into Por-  
tuguese, and re-published at Lisbon; but as it  
was found to interfere with the profits of the Ga-  
zette, it has been prohibited.

There are several very extensive booksellers'  
shops in Lisbon, where most of the continental  
works may be met with, up to 1807; and at the



A.D. 1812.  University-Press of Coimbra, some works have been printed in a very superior manner. The Royal Academy of Sciences has a very good printing-office, and there are two or three private printing-offices in Lisbon by no means bad. The paper used in works of any consequence is chiefly foreign, and principally from England or Holland, as the little which is manufactured in the country is extremely bad-coloured and coarse. At present, paper is a considerable article of export from this country to Portugal, and in the best printing-offices, the types are English. A great number of pamphlets are daily issuing from the press in Lisbon, chiefly invectives against the French, and respecting Sebastianism<sup>2</sup>; some beautiful detached poems make their appearance occasionally; but no work of any importance, if we except GAMA, or, the Discovery of India, an epic poem, and the History of the French Invasion, have been published since the commencement of the present war. Within the last twenty years, several very valuable papers have been published by the Academy of Sciences, and many of the Classics, and ancient works connected with the history and antiquities of Portugal, have been re-printed at the University-Press in Coimbra. At present, a very splendid edition of the “Flora Lusitana,” with coloured plates,



is publishing in that city. The collection of unpublished books relating to the history of Portugal, published by the Royal Academy, contains many valuable documents of great importance to the historian; and the Vestiges of the Arabic Language in Portugal, by Friar John de Souza, is a work of great interest to those who are fond of Oriental literature. Every work of true merit is sure to meet with a powerful patron in his Royal Highness the Prince Regent; and from the catalogue of books published at Rio de Janeiro, both original and translations, which I have seen, it is evident that literary pursuits are not neglected in the New World. The most valuable of the English medical works have been translated into Portuguese, particularly the works of Darwin, Cullen, Brown, &c.; and Hamilton on Purgatives, and Duncan's Dispensary, are now, I believe, in the press. Cullen's Nosology forms the text-book in the University of Coimbra.

Among literary establishments, the ancient University of Coimbra certainly holds the first rank. It was established by King Dennis at Lisbon in 1291, but transferred to Coimbra in 1308, where it has remained, with an exception of fifty-six years that it was removed to Lisbon, in the reigns of Don Ferdinand and John I. and where it flourished under the auspices of the great Prince Henry. John III. who enlarged and regulated

A.D. 1812.



A.D. 1812. this University, established it in its present situation at Coimbra, and men of eminence in the arts and sciences were invited from every nation in Europe, to become Professors in that school; and we find many of the most distinguished scholars of the 15th century teachers at Coimbra in this King's reign. In the reign of Joseph I. its regulations were altered and enlarged.

The principal officers of the University are, the Reformer, who has the direction of all matters connected with the institution; the Rector, or, in his absence, the Vice-Rector, who presides in the College of Deans; and the Chancellor, the principal superintendant in matters of learning, and who confers all academical honours, and presides at the examinations of the students. Each Faculty is represented in the Council of the University by its Dean, and all transactions relating to money and property are managed by a Board of three Deputies chosen by the University, with the Treasurer, and Clerk. There are six Faculties, viz. Theology, Canon Law, Jurisprudence, Medicine, Mathematics, and Philosophy, and degrees are given in each of these Faculties. The Professors are called "Lentes," as Professor, in Portuguese, signifies only a teacher or schoolmaster, and there are substitute Professors and demonstrators, in addition to the regular Profes-



sors of the University. The lectures and exa-<sup>A. D. 1812.</sup>minations are all in Portuguese, the terms are the same as in our English Universities, and the lectures are free to all students. Bachelors and Masters degrees are the most common, as few take the degree of Doctor in any of the Faculties, unless they have a prospect of becoming a Professor in the University. There is a fine Museum of natural history belonging to the University, but the most valuable articles have been packed up, and sent to Lisbon. The collection of philosophical instruments is good, and well arranged. The library is by no means so extensive as many in private convents, but contains most of the modern publications. The botanic garden is small, but is well arranged, and contains a very extensive collection of exotic, as well as indigenous plants. Botany and mineralogy have been much studied in Portugal, but the country is more favourable to the former than to the latter.

At Coimbra, the student of medicine has to serve a long apprenticeship at the University before he can graduate. During the first year, he must attend the Greek and Latin classes, and the lectures on arithmetic, geometry, trigonometry, and natural history. If approved at the public examinations, he is allowed the second year to attend the lec-



A.D. 1812.  tures on algebra, the application of algebra to geometry, integral and differential fluxions, and general and particular physics. In the third year, he is obliged to attend chemistry, botany, and agriculture; and if approved at the public examinations, he is permitted to commence the study of medicine. In the first year of his medical studies, and fourth of his University course, he attends the lectures on anatomy, surgery, and midwifery. In the second year, he studies physiology and pathology; in the third, materia medica and pharmacy; in the fourth, nosology and the theory of physic; and in the fifth of his medical course, and eighth of attendance at the University, he attends the lectures on the practice of physic; for the last three years, he is also obliged to attend the hospital and clinical lectures; but this long course is only necessary for the student to take a Doctor's degree, which is very expensive. The greater part of the physicians in Portugal, therefore, are only Bachelors, who are licensed to practice by the University and Board of Health.

The Royal Academy of Sciences of Lisbon deserves next to be mentioned. It was founded by her present Majesty, and has done much for the advancement of science. The memoirs published by this Society are many of them interesting



and well written, and many of the prize essays <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> deserve to be more generally known. Lord Wellington was lately made an honorary member, and the Society have offered a sum of money for the best essay on his Lordship's campaigns in that country. The acting members are divided into three classes, viz. natural history, mathematics, and literature; but the Academy consists of honorary and foreign members, veteran members, and corresponding members, as well as of the acting members.

The College of the Nobles, founded in 1761, was, previous to the war, a most excellent institution, as in it the young nobility were brought up and educated under proper masters; but its halls are now deserted, and the building is made a barrack for a regiment of militia. There is an academy for the instruction of the youths destined for the sea-service, and another for the artillery and engineer corps; and public teachers are maintained by the government in every part of the kingdom, for the instruction of youth; but, as is well observed by a German traveller in that country, "there is no want of means; the defect is in the choice of them, the requisite taste for knowledge not having yet been found, and nobody knowing how to impart it."



## C H A P. VIII.

*A Sketch of the Campaign in Portugal in 1810,  
1811, and 1812.*

A. D. 1810.

IN the following slight sketch of the operations of the allied army during the last three years, the movements and conduct of the Portuguese troops are principally attended to.

In the history of that army, I have brought down the campaign to the latter end of 1809, when the troops were recalled from the northern frontier, and cantoned in the interior of the kingdom, for the purpose of being organized and disciplined. In the latter end of March and beginning of April 1810, Marshal Beresford collected the different brigades of the army, and kept them together in and near Coimbra for ten days. He reviewed and minutely inspected the whole in this collected form, and then marched them off to join the British army, which was now on the



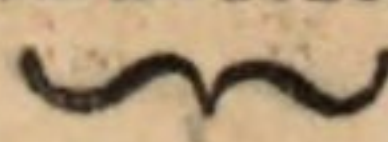
frontiers, and they were incorporated with the several divisions of that army. The divisions of Militia and Ordenanza of the northern provinces were allowed to remain in detached bodies, the whole being commanded by the Portuguese Lieutenant-general Bacellar, but the individual divisions by Brigadier-generals Silveira and Millar, and Colonels Trant and Wilson \*. No movement of any consequence took place, till the fall of Cidade Rodrigo allowed the French to advance upon Portugal. Early in June, however, the division of Militia under the command of General Silveira, and the light troops of the Line, which were in advance, began to skirmish with the enemy. And on the morning of the 24th of July, the First and Third Battalions of Portuguese Caçadores had an opportunity of distinguishing themselves. These two corps had been attached to the light division of the British army under the late Major-general Robert Crawford, and had often been engaged in out-post skirmishes, in which they had behaved well, but they had never seen any thing like a general action.

On the morning of the above-mentioned day, 24th July. Marshal Ney advanced upon the position occu-

---

\* Colonel Trant and Colonel Wilson have both been promoted to the rank of Brigadier-generals.



A. D. 1810.  pied by our light troops, with the whole of the Sixth Corps d'Armée, consisting of not less than twenty-four thousand men. The centre of the line of piquets, which occupied the road leading from Almeida to Val de la Mula, was first attacked; but these piquets were withdrawn, as the head of a strong column soon presented itself with artillery, and began to form on the opposite side of a rivulet. General Crawford, being convinced of the impossibility of preventing the investment of Almeida, from the numbers opposed to him, determined on crossing the Coa; and in the face of this immense force, the General brought off his troops with, comparatively speaking, very little loss. Some companies of the Forty-third Regiment, as also part of the Ninety-fifth, with the Third Battalion of Portuguese Caçadores, were placed on a height in front of the bridge over the Coa, which they kept possession of till the whole of the division had passed over, and till one of the horse-artillery ammunition wagons which had been overturned in a very bad situation, was got up, and dragged by the men to the other side of the river. In the general orders of the French army, Marshal Ney and General Loison pay their troops some very flattering compliments on the success of this attack, which proves that it must have been nobly contested by



the small division of the allied army: the gallant <sup>A. D. 1810.</sup> conduct of the Third Battalion of Portuguese Caçadores, commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Elder, is particularly mentioned by General Crawford.

After the fall of Almeida, Lord Wellington retired upon the Ponte de Murcella, and the French advanced by way of Celorica and Trancoso upon Vizeu. In these movements the advanced posts of the allied army never gave way but when the enemy advanced in force, so that he was kept continually in check in his front, while the divisions of Militia and Ordenanza were employed on his flanks and rear. Colonel Trant, with his division, attacked the escort of the military chest and reserve of artillery near Tojal, on the 20th of September, and made two officers and one hundred men prisoners. The divisions of General Millar and Colonel Wilson got between the French army and Almeida, and cut off its communication with that garrison for some time. On the 21st of September, the advanced guard of the French army pushed on to St Cambadaô, which obliged Brigadier-general Pack to retire with his brigade, (the First and Sixteenth Regiments of the Line, and Fourth Caçadores), across the river Criz, and join Major-general Crawford's at Mortagoa. The bridges over the rivers Criz and Daô



A.D. 1810. were destroyed by General Pack, but the enemy having repaired the bridge over the Criz, the whole of Marshal Ney's corps was collected on the opposite side of that river, and his advanced guard crossed it on the evening of the 23d. On the 25th of September, the whole of the Sixth, and also the Second Corps of the French army crossed the Criz, and General Crawford's division, and Brigadier-general Pack's brigade, retired to the position which had been fixed upon by the Commander-in-chief, on the Sierra de Busaco. The retreat of these two bodies was one of the finest sights ever witnessed, and though closely pursued by the whole of the two corps of Ney and Regnier, it was conducted by General Crawford in so able a manner, that the troops took their position in the line without suffering any great loss. The steadiness of the Portuguese troops in this movement was very conspicuous, and the gallantry and steadiness of the Fourth Battalion of Caçadores, which was engaged with the advance of Regnier's corps in the afternoon of the 25th, is particularly mentioned by the Commander-in-chief, in his Lordship's dispatch to the Earl of Liverpool.

Massena, deceived by a Portuguese officer, in whose opinion he placed the greatest confidence, as to the quality of the Portuguese



troops, and ignorant of the extent of the force <sup>A. D. 1810.</sup> which had been collected upon the summit of the Sierra de Busaco, ordered, on the morning of the 27th, an attack to be made upon the allied army in that impenetrable position, at two different points; the one on the right, the other on the left of the highest part of the Sierra. The attack upon the right was made by two divisions of Regnier's corps, and upon that part of the Sierra which was occupied by General Picton's division of the allied army. One of these divisions gained the summit of the mountain, when it was repulsed in a most gallant manner by the Forty-fifth and Eighty-eighth British Regiments, and by the Eighth Portuguese Regiment, under the command of Lieutenant-colonel Douglas. This young corps joined the British troops in the charge, and assisted in driving the enemy from the advantageous ground which he had gained. The other division deployed more to the right, by the road leading to St Antonio de Cantaro, but was repulsed before it could reach the top of the Sierra by his Majesty's Seventy-fourth Regiment, and the Ninth and Twenty-first Regiments of Portuguese Infantry, under the command of Colonel Champalimaud. General Picton made a most flattering report of the conduct of these two corps, as also of the Portuguese Artillery, under the



A. D. 1810. command of Major Arinchild; and Lord Wellington was pleased to declare in his public dispatch, that he had never witnessed a more gallant attack than that made by his Majesty's Eighty-eighth and Forty-fifth Regiments, and the Eighth Portuguese Infantry.

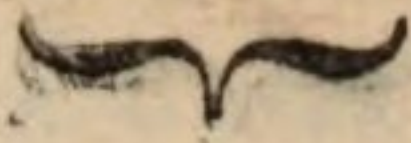
The attack upon the left was made by three divisions of infantry of the sixth corps of the French army, and upon that part of the Sierra which was occupied by General Crawford's division, and Brigadier-General Pack's brigade. The steadiness with which one of these divisions ascended the mountain was really astonishing; but, upon General Crawford charging them with his Majesty's Forty-third, Fifty-second, and Ninety-fifth Regiments, and the Third Battalion of Portuguese Caçadores, they were soon routed, and driven down with immense loss. Brigadier-general Coleman's brigade of Portuguese Infantry, which was in reserve, was moved up to support General Crawford, and a battalion of the Nineteenth Portuguese, under the command of Lieutenant-colonel M'Bean, made a most gallant and successful charge upon another division of the enemy. Lieutenant-colonel M'Bean had his horse shot in this charge, and though it was uncertain for a moment whether it was the horse or the rider that was wounded, yet the ardour of the brave



Portuguese was not in the least damped by seeing <sup>A.D. 1810.</sup> their leader fall—they cheered for revenge; but renewed the cheer with more joy for victory, when they saw their Lieutenant-colonel again at their head. Besides these attacks, the light troops of the two armies were engaged throughout the whole of the 27th; and the Fourth Battalion of Portuguese Caçadores, and First and Sixteenth Regiments of Infantry of the Line, directed by Brigadier-general Pack, and commanded by Lieutenant-colonel de Rego, Lieutenant-colonel Hill, and Major Armstrong, shewed great steadiness and gallantry.

I shall conclude the transactions of this day, so glorious to the allied arms, with the words of Lord Wellington in his dispatch to the Earl of Liverpool, and which were truly gratifying to the Portuguese nation: “Although,” says his Lordship, “from the unfortunate circumstance of the delay of Colonel Trant’s arrival at Sardaô, I am apprehensive that I shall not succeed in effecting the object which I had in view, in passing the Mondego, and in occupying the Sierra de Busaco, I do not regret my having done so. This movement has afforded me a favourable opportunity of shewing the enemy the description of troops of which this army is composed; it has brought the Portuguese levies into action with the



A. D. 1810.  enemy *for the first time*, in an advantageous situation ; and they have proved that the trouble which has been taken with them has not been thrown away ; *and that they are worthy of contending in the same ranks with British troops in this interesting cause, which they afford the best hopes of saving."*

In the action of the 27th of September, the Portuguese had one Captain, two Subalterns, one Serjeant, one Drummer, and eighty-two rank and file, killed ; and one Colonel, one Major, five Captains, eighteen Subalterns, nine Serjeants, and four hundred and seventy-eight rank and file, wounded.

Lord Wellington, in pursuance of the plan which he had long fixed upon, retired from Busaco, and crossed the Mondego near Coimbra, on the 29th and 30th of September, with the whole of the allied army. About mid-day, on the 1st of October, the advanced guard of the French army entered Coimbra. The left of the allied army continued to march by Leiria and Alcobaça, upon the lines of Torres Vedras, while General Hill's division, and the right wing, passed on by Thomar and Santarem, and came into the line at Villa Franca.

Massena remained quietly at Coimbra till the evening of the 4th, when, about midnight, the whole army moved forward, leaving only the sick



and wounded, and a few gens d'armes, to keep <sup>A.D. 1810.</sup> order in the city. No action of any consequence took place from the time our army left Busaco, till it got into the lines. But Colonel Trant, having been informed of the state in which Coimbra had been left, determined, if possible, in conjunction with Brigadier-general Millar and Colonel Wilson, to retake it. With this view, he moved the division under his order to Mealhada, where he expected General Millar and Colonel Wilson would join him with the troops under their command; but in this he was disappointed, as these officers could not get on for want of supplies. Under these circumstances, Colonel Trant determined to move on with his own division, and endeavour to surprise the troops in Coimbra, before his arrival at Mealhada could be known, or any means used for the defence of the city. He therefore marched about mid-day on the 7th, having a squadron of Cavalry in his front, commanded by a very distinguished young officer, Lieutenant Dutel, and two hundred light troops. The Regiment of Militia of Coimbra headed the column of Infantry, having that station allotted them as the post of honour. Colonel Trant determined to enter the city by two different gates, but this was not found to be necessary. Near Fornas he succeeded in cutting off a detachment



A.D. 1810. of the enemy, which prevented any information being given to the troops in Coimbra; so that, when his cavalry were heard galloping along the streets, it was for some time uncertain whether they were French or Portuguese.

By the judicious manœuvre of crossing the Mondego, and penetrating into the Lisbon road, they equally cut off all communication with the main army.

Colonel Trant entered the city with his columns of infantry very soon after the cavalry had crossed the Mondego, and having dispatched divisions to the principal streets and squares, the whole were very soon subdued; the enemy's troops surrendered at discretion, and the prisoners exceeded five thousand, among whom were upwards of eighty officers; three thousand five hundred firelocks were found, and almost the whole of them loaded.

If the action of Busaco was honourable to the regular forces of Portugal, this brilliant affair was equally so to Colonel Trant, and the Militia under his command; yet the joy of the poor fellows on recovering their native city, was much damped by the misery in which they found it. "The enemy," says Colonel Trant, "not content with sacking it to the utmost extent, and stripping the few housekeepers who remained of even their



personal cloathing, had wantonly set fire to some <sup>A.D. 1810.</sup> houses, and had heaped into the streets, in one general mass of disorder, all the furniture which they could not take with the army." Besides the prisoners taken in Coimbra by Colonel Trant, between three and four hundred were collected by Brigadier-general Millar, in the neighbourhood of that city.

While these operations were carrying on in the north, an equally destructive warfare was kept up by Brigadier-general Blunt, from the garrison of Peniche. No sooner had the enemy got possession of Sobral, than General Blunt began to annoy his right flank and rear. This active officer kept continually sending out small detachments from his garrison, which proved very destructive to the enemy's foraging parties, and obliged him, even on the most trivial occasions, to move in force. In this service Brigadier-general Blunt was most ably seconded by the brave Captain Fenwick, who, after taking and destroying not less than between two and three hundred of the enemy, and after being engaged more than twenty times, fell a sacrifice to his own bravery, in an attack upon a party of eighty grenadiers, at Evora, near Alcobaça, on the 8th of December. On the 14th of October, the enemy attacked a detachment of the Seventy-first British



A. D. 1810. Regiment, as also a piquet of the Eleventh and Twenty-third Portuguese Regiments: but the former, led on by the Honourable Lieutenant-colonel Cadogan and Lieutenant-colonel Reynell, and the latter, with Colonel Harvey at their head, soon put his columns to the rout. In this charge Colonel Harvey received a musket-ball through his left shoulder, which deprived the army of his services for a time.

On the 14th of November, Massena commenced his retreat from the position in front of the British lines. The allied army began to advance on the morning of the 15th, and followed the route of the enemy. The advanced guard and cavalry reached Alenquer on the 15th, Azambuja and Alcoentre on the 16th, and Cartaxo on the 17th, and were followed in their line of march, and supported, by Sir Brent Spencer's Division, and the Fifth Division, under the command of Major-general Leith.

In these movements they took about four hundred prisoners. Major-general Fane, who had occupied the left bank of the Tagus for some time with the Thirteenth Light Dragoons, and Fourth and Tenth Regiments of Portuguese Cavalry, was joined on the 18th by the Second Division of the allied army, under the command of Lieutenant-general Hill: and while the grand



army, under the Commander-in-chief, took up a strong position on the river Maior, Lieutenant-general Hill watched the positions of the enemy from Mugem, Almorim, and Chamusca. During these movements, the enemy made several attempts to cross the Zezere at Punhete, but the fords of this river were most gallantly defended by Lieutenant-colonel Watling of the Twenty-second Portuguese Regiment, who had been detached by Governor Lobo, with a small force, from the garrison of Abrantes, for the purpose of defending that position as long as possible. The whole of Loison's division, however, being brought against this small detachment, Lieutenant-colonel Watling was obliged to retire to the garrison. In several skirmishes which took place previous to Lieutenant-colonel Watling's retreat, the men of his detachment belonging to the Thirteenth and Twenty-second Regiments of the Line, shewed the greatest steadiness and gallantry; and such was the resistance made by the armed peasants and Ordenanza at this period, in every part of the country, that when General Foy was sent to France with dispatches for his government, he was obliged to take with him a guard of two thousand men.

About the middle of December a strong reinforcement for Massena's army entered Portugal.



A.D. 1810. It arrived upon the Alva at the Ponte de Murcella on the 24th of that month, and continued its march to join the army. Colonel Wilson, who had been for some time with his division of Militia at Espinhal, crossed the Mondego on the advance of these troops; but by repassing that river on the 25th, he came up with the enemy's rear on his march from the Alva to Espinhal, and took several prisoners, and cut off some of their small detachments.

General Claparede, who commanded a division of the French army on the frontiers, having got information of the numbers and position of the troops under General Silveira, attacked him at the Ponte d'Albade near Trancoso, on the 30th of December, and obliged him to retire with some loss. In this action the brave Twenty-fourth Regiment distinguished itself. General Silveira's division had been so annoying to the French army, that Claparede appeared determined to extirpate it. He kept up a harassing pursuit for several days; and besides Lieutenant-colonel M'Bean, who was severely wounded, the Twenty-fourth Regiment had to lament the loss of Major Cocksey, who was killed at Villa de Ponte on the 14th of January. Lieutenant-general Baçellar brought the divisions of Brigadier-general Millar and of Colonel Wilson to bear upon the flanks and rear



of Claparede's army, which checked his pursuit <sup>A. D. 1811.</sup> of General Silveira; but before this was accomplished, he had driven him from Lamego, and across the Douro.

About this period different corps of the Ordenanza began to unite their forces, and to assume the character of Guerillas. These corps becoming somewhat respectable in the Lower Beira, Lieutenant-colonel Grant, of the Loyal Lusitanian Legion, was sent to take the command of them. This officer was particularly active, and carried on a most destructive warfare against the enemy's escorts in that part of the country. On the 1st of February, he attacked the escort of General Foy, who was returning from France, and by placing about eighty of his Ordenanza on a height near the village of Alpedrinha, they kept up a well-directed fire upon the enemy, and occasioned a loss to him of one colonel, one quarter-master, and two hundred and seven rank and file killed, and eighteen prisoners, besides the greater part of his baggage and cattle. In this affair four Englishmen were taken, who, after being for five years in a French prison, entered the Irish Legion, and who, although they had been for nearly two years with the army in Spain, had not been able to effect their escape. Colonel



A. D. 1811. Grant had also a severe engagement with the division of General Claparede, near Covilaô, on the 12th of February. His Ordenanza behaved so well, that the enemy could not force him to retire till the 18th, and not till they had brought up a strong column with several pieces of artillery. The brigade of cavalry under General Maddan had also frequent skirmishes with the enemy in the neighbourhood of Badajos.

Early in January, Marshal Mortier left Seville; on the 3d he arrived at Ronquillo, and, continuing to advance into Estremadura, he formed a junction with the division under General Girard, at Guadalcanal, and obtained possession of Merida, and the bridge over the Guadiana at that place, on the 9th. Soon afterwards, he commenced the blockade of Olivença, which, containing but a small garrison, and being badly supplied with provisions and stores, was taken possession of on the 22d or 23d.

As soon as it became apparent that an attack upon Badajos was meditated by the French army, the Marquis Romana ordered the Spanish troops under his command, and which had joined the allied British and Portuguese army, to march to the frontier; but the death of that virtuous nobleman at Cartaxo, on the 23d of January, re-



tarded the advance of the troops, as General <sup>A. D. 1811.</sup> Mendizabel, who succeeded to the command, immediately halted them. Upon the recommendation, however, of Lord Wellington, Mendizabel again ordered this army to advance, and joined it at Elvas on the morning of the 6th of February. Mortier, nevertheless, continued his position in the neighbourhood of Badajos, and began to break ground before that place on the left of the Guadiana.

As the Spanish army advanced upon Badajos, the enemy's cavalry, who had been pushed towards Elvas, were withdrawn. While passing the Evora, the French cavalry were attacked by the Spanish troops and Brigadier-general Maddan's brigade of Portuguese cavalry, and lost some cattle and baggage. In this affair the Portuguese behaved most gallantly, but not being supported by the Spaniards, the enemy rallied, and obliged them to recross the Evora with considerable loss.

On the 19th of February, the French attacked General Mendizabel in his position on the heights of St Christoval, and totally defeated him. In this affair General Maddan's brigade suffered severely. The Eighth Regiment, led on by Colonel Brown, cut its way through the French ranks, and retired upon Elvas. Colonel Brown was se-



A. D. 1811. verely wounded, and lost several of his officers and men.

After this defeat of the Spanish army, the most active operations commenced against Badajos, which, though it contained a garrison almost equal to the besieging army, and though there was no practicable breach in the walls, nor any want of provisions in the town, surrendered to the French army on the 10th of March, at the very moment that Lord Wellington had detached a large force under Marshal Beresford for its support.

To make up, however, for these disasters, the French continued to suffer most severely in their position at Santarem, and on the north of the Tagus. General Blunt still kept sending out detachments from his garrison. Parties were taken almost every day by the allied army on the out-posts; and Brigadier-general Lobo, the governor of Abrantes, was most active in organizing Guerillas. The small parties from his garrison killed and took prisoners not less than three hundred of the enemy in the months of January and February.

A peasant, from the neighbourhood of Thomar, of amazing muscular strength, became so annoying to the enemy on the banks of the Zezere, that they offered a very high reward for his head.



This man was accustomed to penetrate their very <sup>A. D. 1811.</sup> encampment at Thomar; he killed upwards of thirty men with his own hand in the month of February, and took about fifty horses and mules. He lived generally in a cave in the mountains, but brought his booty to Abrantes to be sold. He was a most determined, brave-looking fellow, and continued this predatory warfare as long as the enemy remained in the country. All the poor inhabitants of that part of the country flocked to his habitation, and found themselves perfectly secure under his protection.

A young gentleman of the name of GAMA, an ensign of the Twenty-second Regiment, from the garrison of Abrantes, was also very active in procuring information of the enemy's position and movements; and a party from that garrison, which was stationed at the Ponte de Cabril, not only kept the communication with the north open, but was also a severe check upon the marauders from the enemy's army; so much so, indeed, that Loison found it necessary to send a detachment of 2000 men, to dislodge that small party. The party effected its retreat by Castello Branco and Nisa, and joined its corps at Abrantes. But the Guerillas which had been organized in that part of the country by Captain Ray, of the Second Portuguese Regiment, proved so annoy-



A.D. 1811. ing to this advanced detachment of the enemy,  
that it was very soon withdrawn.

When Ney's corps took possession of the banks of the Zezere, a strong division was stationed under Loison at Punhete and Montalvo, the advanced piquets of which were pushed near to Amoreira. Governor Lobo very frequently drove in these advanced piquets, which made it a most severe duty for the enemy, and occasioned him immense loss. In all these sallies from Abrantes, the Portuguese troops, both regulars and militia, behaved with great steadiness, and shewed the greatest anxiety to engage more closely with the enemy; and I am convinced, that had Loison ever attempted to take Abrantes by storm, he would have found it a most difficult matter, and would have suffered severely; for the garrison, although very weak, and for the most part composed of militia regiments, had such confidence in Governor Lobo, that they certainly would have defended the place to the last extremity. Of this, I believe, Massena was pretty well convinced.

On the evening of the 1st of March, a Portuguese boy was taken in Abrantes, with a considerable quantity of hams, tea, sugar, &c. which he had purchased, but for whom he felt some difficulty in declaring. On being carried before the Governor, and minutely interrogated, he confess-



ed, that he was servant to the commanding officer <sup>A. D. 1811.</sup> of the French Sixty-sixth Regiment, and that he had been sent to purchase these articles, in consequence of the army being about to retire to the north of Portugal. He also stated, that Massena was to review the troops on the south of the Zezere at Montalvo, next day, (the 2d of March), and that the retreat would commence on the evening of the 5th. The troops were certainly reviewed on the 2d, and Massena was on the ground from twelve to four o'clock, and the retreat also commenced, as he had stated, on the 5th of March.

Early on the morning of the 6th, Major-general the Honourable William Stewart arrived at Abrantes, with General Houghton's brigade of British infantry, two squadrons of the Thirteenth Light Dragoons, and the Second Portuguese Regiment of the Line, and Fifth Caçadores; for though Massena had commenced his retreat from Santarem, Ney's corps still kept its position. At two o'clock on the morning of the 7th, these troops, reinforced by a detachment from the garrison, marched out to attack the enemy's position at Montalvo, with a view of cutting them off, or of forcing them across the Zezere. Loison, however, retreated about one o'clock, and blew up the bridge on the Zezere.



A. D. 1811.

By bringing boats down the Tagus, in a parallel direction with the troops, General Stewart was enabled to pass his division over the Zezere as soon as it arrived at Punhete. When the troops had crossed the Zezere, Marshal Beresford, who had joined General Stewart with part of Lieutenant-colonel Colborne's brigade, ordered the Thirteenth Dragoons and Portuguese light troops to follow in the direction of Thomar. They came up with the enemy's rear-guard, and had some skirmishing; but being again recalled, the whole division occupied the heights above Punhete for that night. On the 8th, this force marched upon Thomar, supported by the fourth and sixth divisions of the army, as also by part of the first division, and two brigades of cavalry. Massena, however, did not halt at Thomar, but pushed on for the banks of the Mondego. He was closely pursued by the light division of the army, and part of the cavalry, and between Thomar and Pombal he lost about 200 prisoners. On the 9th, the enemy had collected a strong force in front of Pombal; their advance was gallantly charged and driven in by the cavalry and light division. They kept their position till the 11th, when, observing that a sufficient force had been brought up to cope with them, they began to retreat. They were again closely pursued by the



light division and Brigadier-general Pack's brigade, under Major-general Sir William Erskine, and the cavalry under Major-general Slade. In this pursuit, our light troops stormed the old Moorish castle of Pombal, which stands upon a most commanding situation, and drove the enemy's sharpshooters from it in a most superior style. Lord Wellington is pleased to say, that, upon this occasion, Lieutenant-colonel Elder's (the Third) Battalion of Portuguese Caçadores distinguished themselves. On the 12th, the enemy was found in a strong position at the end of a defile between Pombal and Redinha, with their right in a wood upon the Soure river, and their left extending towards the high ground above the river of Redinha, with that village in their rear. Lord Wellington did not hesitate to attack them in this position, from which they were soon driven by our gallant troops. Colonel Elder's Caçadores again distinguished themselves in the attack made upon the right of the enemy in the wood; and their conduct was particularly mentioned by Major-general Sir William Erskine. The third division of the allied army under General Picton, having been moved upon the enemy's left, crossed the Redinha river, and getting into the rising ground, obliged him to fall back towards his main body at Condeixa, with great loss. This flank

A.D. 1811.



A. D. 1811. movement compelled him also to draw off his artillery from the position which commanded the bridge and ford of the river, so that our troops were allowed to pass over. The First Battalion of Caçadores particularly distinguished themselves during this day, as also the flank companies of the Eleventh Regiment of the Line.

On the 13th, Lord Wellington again came up with the enemy at Condeixa, where he had taken up a very strong position, and was observed to be moving off his baggage towards the Ponte de Murcella. General Picton was moved through the mountains on his left flank, which obliged him to commence his retreat from that position rather suddenly, and to encamp for the night in the mountains near Casal Nova, about a league from Condeixa, and where the sixth and eighth corps were found on the morning of the 14th. The light division attacked and drove in the outposts ; but, in order to dislodge him from this position, Lord Wellington again had recourse to his flank movements. General Cole, with the fourth division, was ordered to move upon Panella, and to communicate with Major-general Nightingale, who had moved upon Espinhal on the 10th, for the purpose of watching Regnier's corps. General Picton, with the third division, was sent more immediately round the enemy's left, while Major-



general Sir William Erskine, with the light division and Brigadier-general Pack's Portuguese brigade, turned his right. A. D. 1811.

During these movements, Major-general Alexander Campbell, with the sixth division, supported the attack which had been made by the light troops in front. These combined movements obliged the enemy to quit the strong position which he occupied, and to retreat upon the Ponte de Murcella. The Fourth and Sixth Battalions of Portuguese Caçadores particularly distinguished themselves on the 14th.

On the 15th, the enemy's whole army was found in a most formidable position upon the Ciera river, having one corps as an advanced guard in front of Fos de Aronce. By again moving his divisions upon their right and left, and attacking them briskly in front, Lord Wellington compelled the enemy to abandon this position with great loss in killed, wounded, and prisoners. The troops being prevented from moving early, in consequence of a thick fog, did not get to the ground occupied by the enemy's advanced guard till it was nearly dark, when a small party of the Ninety-fifth got unperceived into a cover between two of the French columns, which were moving in a parallel direction, but unknown to each other. The British riflemen began to fire from



A.D. 1811. the different sides of the cover upon these two columns, which was immediately returned; our brave fellows then retired; and as the French columns kept advancing, they soon cleared the cover, and opened a heavy fire upon each other, and were in the greatest confusion, which the darkness of the night tended to keep up. Many hundreds were lost in crossing the Ciera river in this confusion; and I have heard it asserted, that the one column actually blew up the bridge while the other was upon it.

During these operations on the right bank of the Mondego, Colonels Trant and Wilson moved with their divisions of militia from Coimbra, and took up a position on the left of that river. Massena, finding himself thus hemmed in on every side, retreated with great celerity towards the frontier. For a few hours he seemed to court an attack at Moita, but was obliged to retire from this position on the evening of the 18th; and on the 21st he reached Celorico. On the 22d, Colonel Wilson's division of militia engaged a party of the enemy near that place, killed seven, wounded several, and took fifteen prisoners. The militia under General Silveira also took some prisoners on the 25th.

Lord Wellington having collected his forces in front of Celorico on the 28th, with the view of



dislodging Massena from the position which he <sup>A.D. 1811.</sup> occupied at Guarda, the columns destined for this service were moved forward on the morning of the 29th; but the enemy retired without firing a shot, and took up a position at Sabugal, on the Coa. In this retreat he was followed by our cavalry, who took several prisoners.

In these different skirmishes, the Portuguese troops proved themselves worthy of contending in the same ranks with the British, and they supported hunger and fatigue in this advance beyond what is credible.

The position which the enemy took up upon the Coa was very strong, as that river is difficult of access throughout its whole course; and indeed, that position could only be approached by the left, above Sabugal. This Lord Wellington determined on turning, and accordingly the army was put in motion on the morning of the 3d of April. The sixth division remained stationary opposite to the sixth corps of the enemy's army, which was at Rovina. The second, or Regnier's corps, formed the left of that army, and occupied a strong position, with its right upon a rising ground, immediately above the bridge and town of Sabugal; its left extended along the road leading to Alfayates, to another eminence, which commanded all the approaches to Sabugal, from the



A.D. 1811. ford of the river above the town. Major-general Sir William Erskine and Major-general Slade were ordered to cross the Coa, at two separate fords, upon their right, and the cavalry to keep to the right of the light division. The third division, under Major-general Picton, was ordered to cross at another ford, on the left, about a mile above Sabugal; and Major-general Dunlop, with the fifth division and artillery, at the bridge of Sabugal.

Colonel Beckwith's brigade of light infantry, with two squadrons of cavalry, were the first that crossed the Coa, and four companies of the Ninety-fifth and three of Colonel Elder's Portuguese Caçadores drove in the enemy's piquets. At the moment our troops began to engage with the enemy, a severe storm of rain came on, which rendered it almost impossible to see any thing: our troops, therefore, pushing on in pursuit of the enemy's piquets, came upon the left of their main body, and were driven back upon the Forty-third Regiment, which had been sent to support them. The atmosphere clearing up, the enemy perceived the smallness of the body that was opposed to them, and moved on in column, supported by cavalry and artillery, to the attack; our brave fellows repulsed this attack, and drove the column back upon their main body. In ad-



vancing, however, upon the enemy's position, <sup>A. D. 1811.</sup> they were attacked by a fresh column upon their left, and at the same moment charged by the First French Hussars upon their right, which obliged them to retire and take post behind a wall. From this position they again repulsed the enemy, and advancing in pursuit, took from them a howitzer. Being attacked a third time with fresh columns of infantry and cavalry, they were a third time obliged to retire to their post behind the wall; where they were joined by the other brigade of the Light Division, consisting of the two battalions of the Fifty-second Regiment, and First Portuguese Caçadores. They now repulsed the enemy with great vigour, and though attacked by fresh columns, supported by cavalry, which charged their right, they were able to take post upon a rising ground, and to protect the howitzer which had been taken by the Forty-third Regiment in the former pursuit. The enemy was about to make a desperate effort to drive them from this position, when the light infantry of General Picton's division, under the command of Lieutenant-colonel Williams, supported by Major-general Colville's brigade, opened their fire upon them; at the same moment the head of Major-general Dunlop's column crossed the bridge of the Coa, and ascended the heights on the



A.D. 1811. right, and the cavalry appeared on the high ground, in the rear of their left. This obliged the enemy to retire precipitately across the hills, towards Rindo; and, as Lord Wellington observes, "leaving the howitzer in the possession of those who had so gallantly gained and preserved it, and about two hundred killed on the field, and six officers and three hundred prisoners in our hands." After this glorious action, in which the Light Division distinguished itself so nobly, and in which the First and Third Caçadores bore a conspicuous part, the enemy quitted the kingdom of Portugal entirely, and retired behind the Agueda. The joy which prevailed throughout the nation on that occasion was sincere and universal; and the gratitude which the country felt is most elegantly expressed by the Governors of Portugal, in their letter to the victorious Wellington.

"Your Excellency's dispatch, (say the Governors of Portugal), dated the 9th instant, having been laid before us, and your glorious and transcendent services in the course of the present campaign having been duly considered, we have high satisfaction in testifying our just admiration of the exalted achievements which have immortalized your Excellency's name, sustained the honour of the combined armies, and delivered



this kingdom, a third time, from the oppression <sup>A.D. 1811.</sup> of our enemies. The conduct of the army having justified the confidence of their Chief, and fulfilled the expectations of the allied nations, we are desirous that you do make known to the whole army, that the Government and the country are amply repaid for their exertions and sacrifices, by the wisdom, valour, and discipline displayed by the Generals, officers, and privates, of which that army is composed. We will lay before his Royal Highness the Prince Regent of Portugal, in the most distinct manner, the events which have taken place, recommending to his Royal notice the services of an Army which has covered itself with glory under your Excellency's command.

“ Your Excellency cannot fail to derive high gratification from the result of your plans and labours ; which, crowned with the most eminent success and public opinion, leave nothing wanting to satisfy the heart of the illustrious warrior by whom they were conceived and accomplished.”

After the action of Sabugal, the allied army took up a position on the river Duas Casas ; and Lord Wellington, giving up the command to Sir Brent Spencer, set off for the army of the south \*.

---

\* The Army of the South consisted of Brigadier-general



A. D. 1811. This army, commanded by Marshal Sir William Carr Beresford, moved from its cantonments near Abrantes, on the 18th of March. At Portalegre and Aronches, it was joined by Major-general Cole's division, and after halting to refresh those troops which had had a long and fatiguing march, the whole moved forward on the 25th, in the direction of Campo Maior. Upon approaching this town, they found the enemy, consisting of four regiments of cavalry, three battalions of infantry, and some horse artillery, drawn up in front of the place. The cavalry were formed in line, and the infantry in close column of divisions in their rear. The Thirteenth Dragoons, consisting of not more than 200, coming almost in contact with the enemy's line, were ordered to charge, which they did in a very gallant style. The enemy's cavalry were completely routed, and Colonel Head, being supported by two squadrons of the Seventh Portuguese Dragoons, pursued them to the very gates of Badajos. In this action the Portuguese Dragoons behaved remarkably well, and Colonel Otway found some difficulty in restraining their ardour.

---

Long's brigade of cavalry; the First and Seventh Regiments of Portuguese Cavalry, under Colonel Otway; the second division of British infantry; and Major-general Hamilton's division of Portuguese infantry.



This brilliant affair was not performed without <sup>A. D. 1811.</sup> a severe loss to the allied cavalry; for, having to pass the front of the column of infantry, they were fired upon with considerable effect. Compared with the loss of the enemy, however, that of the allies was a mere trifle.

Marshal Beresford, with the army of the South, crossed the Guadiana on the 4th of April, and took up a position to invest Badajos and Olivença. The investment of this latter place was entrusted to General Cole's division, and the Portuguese Artillery, under Major Nixon. It surrendered on the 15th of April, and the Franciscan Gate was taken possession of by the grenadier company of the Eleventh Portuguese Regiment.

In the account given by Major-general Cole of this investment, he states, that he felt great satisfaction in saying, that "the conduct of the Portuguese Artillery, employed in the breaching battery, was highly creditable," and that it was owing to the fire kept up by the "British light companies, and the rifle companies of the Sixtieth, and Brunswick Regiments, under Majors Pearson and Birmingham, and *the flank companies of Colonel Harvey's Portuguese brigade,*" that so trifling a loss had been sustained.

Marshal Beresford, judging it expedient to drive the enemy from the frontiers previous to the



A. D. 1811. investment of Badajos, proceeded on the 14th of April to Albuera, on the 15th to St Martha, and on the 16th to Los Santos. Here the British and Portuguese cavalry fell in with a body of the enemy, and took 160 prisoners, and killed and wounded a great many. As the enemy had retired completely from the province of Estremadura, Marshal Beresford did not think proper to advance further than Los Santos, and the troops returned to the investment of Badajos.

Lord Wellington, having arrived with the army of the South on the 21st, proceeded next day to reconnoitre Badajos with Marshal Beresford. They were escorted by the two light battalions of the King's German Legion, and two squadrons of Portuguese cavalry. This escort was attacked by three regiments from the garrison, and some skirmishing took place, in which the Portuguese shewed great steadiness. It was said, however, that Lord Wellington had a very narrow escape, as at one time he was almost surrounded with the enemy's troops.

The garrison of Elvas (Portuguese) had, with great labour, constructed a bridge of boats across the Guadiana, and the siege of Badajos was about to commence, when, unfortunately, on the night of the 23d, this bridge was carried away by a sudden rise of the river, in consequence of the



heavy rains. Lord Wellington therefore directed, A. D. 1811. that the operations of the siege should be delayed until this bridge was re-established, but that, in the mean time, the city should be closely blockaded.

Having received information that Massena was again collecting his forces in the neighbourhood of Cidade Rodrigo, Lord Wellington proceeded to join the army in the north, and arrived at Villa Formosa on the 29th of April. On the 2d of May, the whole of the enemy's army, consisting of the remains of the Second, Sixth, and Eighth Corps, with all the cavalry that could be collected in Castile and Leon, crossed the Agueda. The battalions which composed the Ninth Corps, were united to their respective regiments in the above corps; but such of those battalions as belonged to the regiments doing duty in Andalusia, were formed into a separate division. The object of the enemy in making this movement, was to relieve Almeida, in which a small French garrison, under General Brenier, had been shut up, by the very rapid advance of our army, and which was known to be in the greatest distress. Lord Wellington having taken a position, and having no object in view but the blockade of Almeida, did not oppose the enemy's advance, and accordingly he appeared upon the river Duas Casas, on the



A.D. 1811. morning of the 3d, in three columns. Two of the columns, consisting of the second and eighth corps, took the direction of Fort Conception and Almeida, while the third, composed of the sixth corps, the cavalry, and division of the ninth corps, moved in the direction of Fuentes de Onoro. The allied army was cantoned along the river Duas Casas, and on the Source of the Azeva. The light division, with the cavalry, was at Galegos, but was ordered to fall back upon Fuentes de Onoro, where the first, third, and seventh divisions were collected, as the enemy advanced. The sixth division observed the bridge of Almeida, and Major-general Sir William Erskine, with the fifth division, guarded the passages of the river Duas Casas, at Fort Conception and Aldea do Bispo; while General Pack, with the First and Sixteenth Portuguese Regiments, and his Majesty's Second Regiment, or Queen's, kept up the blockade of Almeida, and Don Julian Sanchez, who was with the British army, was prevailed upon to take post with his Guerillas at Nave da Aver. On the afternoon of the 3d, the enemy attacked the village of Fuentes de Onoro with a very strong force, and were gallantly repulsed by the light infantry battalions of Major-general Picton's division, under the command of Lieutenant-colonel Williams, of the Sixtieth, and



by the light infantry of Major-general Nightingale's and Major-general Howard's brigades, under the command of Majors Dick, of the Forty-second, and M'Donnell, of the Ninety-second. The light infantry battalion of the King's German Legion, under Major Alley, and the Second Battalion of the Eighty-third Regiment, under Major Carr, supported these corps. As repeated efforts were made by the enemy to gain possession of the village, the Seventy-first Regiment, under Colonel Cadogan, and the Seventy-ninth, under Lieutenant-colonel Cameron, were also moved up to support the troops engaged, and Lieutenant-colonel Williams having been wounded, the command of the whole devolved upon Lieutenant-colonel Cameron, of the Seventy-ninth. The enemy kept up the contest till it was dark, but our troops remained in possession of the whole of the village for the night, during which, however, our light troops were withdrawn; so that the Seventy-first and Seventy-ninth Regiments only remained in the place, with the Twenty-fourth in reserve. On the 4th, the enemy contented himself with reconnoitring our position. His intentions were very soon penetrated by Lord Wellington, and though Junot's corps was moved in the night to the left of the position occupied by the sixth corps, this movement was perfectly anticipated.



A. D. 1811. by the Commander of the forces; for as soon as it was dark, his Lordship moved the seventh division, under Major-general Houston, to the Poyo Velho, the only ford by which the enemy could cross the river at that part. On the morning of the 5th, the eighth corps appeared opposite Major-general Houston's division, while the sixth corps, and the division of the ninth also, made a movement to their left. The light division of the British army was sent to support General Houston, while the first and third made a movement to their right, on a rising ground between the Turon and Duas Casas rivers, so as to keep opposite to the sixth and ninth corps of the enemy's army. The eighth corps attacked the advanced guard of Major-general Houston's division, and was warmly received by the Eighty-fifth Regiment, under Major Macintosh, and the Second Portuguese Caçadores, under Lieutenant-colonel Nixon. The enemy, however, pushing on in force, obliged these corps to retire, which they did in the best order, though exposed to a galling and destructive fire. Having gained the Poyo Velho, the enemy's cavalry were able to turn the right of the seventh division, between that place and Nave da Aver, (from which post Don Julian Sanchez had previously been obliged to retire), and in this position they made a furious charge



upon our troops. This charge was gallantly met <sup>A.D. 1811.</sup> by a few squadrons of British Dragoons, with Major-general the Honourable Charles Stewart at their head, which completely repulsed their advanced guard; and Colonel La Motte, of the Thirteenth French Chasseurs, was taken prisoner by General Stewart. The Chasseurs Britanniques, under Lieutenant-colonel Eustace, and a detachment of the Duke of Brunswick's Light Infantry, shewed great steadiness on this occasion. Being on the enemy's flank, and somewhat concealed by a rising ground, they allowed the main body of the cavalry to come in a line with their front, when, rising up, they threw in a volley, so well directed, that it completely checked, and indeed obliged them to retire. Lord Wellington, who had perceived the enemy's object, and who was well aware of the importance of the position of Fuentes de Onoro, immediately moved the seventh and light divisions to that point. The light division was placed on the left of the first as a reserve, and the seventh on some commanding ground beyond the Turon, which not only protected the right flank and rear of the first division, but kept open the communication with the Coa, and prevented the enemy from approaching Almeida by any of the roads between the Turon and that river. The different movements,



A. D. 1811. on this occasion, were well conducted by the officers who commanded, and a most commanding position was taken up, extending from the Turon to the Duas Casas.

The enemy had suffered so much in his attempts upon the right, that he declined making any attack upon it in this position: a cannonade, however, was kept up throughout the whole of the day, and his cavalry occasionally charged our advanced posts. In all these charges they were repulsed; but, unfortunately, a piquet of the first division, under Lieutenant-colonel Hill, of the Third Guards, which was returning after having repulsed a charge, was surprised by a body of cavalry before it had time to form, and Lieutenant-colonel Hill and some men were taken prisoners.

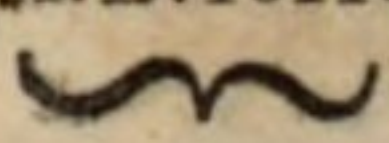
Fuentes de Onoro again became the object of contest, and the whole of the sixth corps was brought up at different periods of the day to attack it; but it was so well defended by our brave troops, that they never gained more than a very temporary possession of it. The Seventh and Nineteenth Portuguese Regiments of the Line, the Sixth Caçadores, and the light companies of the Sixth, Eighteenth, Ninth, and Twenty-first Regiments, particularly distinguished themselves in the defence of Fuentes. While this contest



was going on, which lasted till dark, a part of <sup>A.D. 1811.</sup> Regnier's corps at one time shewed some intention of attacking Sir William Erskine's post at Aldea do Bispo, but the Second Battalion of the Lusitanian Legion, having crossed the river *Duas Casas* at the ford, obliged them to retire. The enemy drew off his troops as soon as night came on, and left our brave fellows in possession of the village of *Fuentes*; and although they kept a position in front of the army on the 5th, they began to retreat on the 7th, continued it on the 8th and 9th, and on the 10th they were once more beyond the *Agueda*. In this action the enemy lost nearly four thousand in killed and wounded, and we took about six hundred prisoners.

Though Massena failed in his attempt to relieve the garrison of Almeida, he got a letter conveyed to General Brenier, which informed him of his bad success, and which, I believe, determined this officer to attempt what fortunately for him succeeded. General Brenier saw he was left to his fate; if he remained in the garrison, his troops must starve, or become prisoners of war; if he quitted the garrison in a dark night, they could only be taken, but some might escape:—in the one case there was a chance of his escaping, in the other there was none; he therefore determined on quitting Almeida with his troops,



 A.D. 1811. and accordingly left it about one o'clock on the morning of the 12th of May. For several nights previous to the 11th, Brenier had employed his troops in the destruction of the ordnance, which he did by firing one piece into the mouth of another; so that our piquets being accustomed to the reports of artillery, did not pay so much attention to the blowing up of the mines as they might otherwise have done. On leaving the gate, he moved forward in two columns, which, however, kept close together, and coming in contact with a piquet of the Sixteenth Portuguese Regiment, it was immediately overpowered and bayonnetted on the spot.

The sixth division, which, after the retreat of Massena, was ordered to resume its station before Almeida, had only come into its position that afternoon; and General Pack's brigade, which had continued the blockade during the absence of the sixth division, had been moved to its former quarters late that evening, which circumstances were much in Brenier's favour. Brigadier-general Pack, who was at Malpartida, being immediately informed of what had happened, collected about one hundred of his brigade, and attacked the rear of the column, and threw them into considerable confusion. By throwing away their baggage, and casting loose their horses and



mules, the French distracted the attention of the pursuers, so that General Pack's party, engaged in securing the plunder, was soon diminished. Major-general Campbell, and a part of the Thirty-sixth, also joined in the pursuit. The loss of the enemy was immense; but the Fourth Regiment unfortunately missing its road, did not arrive at Barba del Puerco as soon as was expected, so that General Brenier and a few did escape; but that number was very small. When it is considered, that for the whole of the way from Almeida to the bridge over the Agueda, he was fired upon by the party which accompanied General Pack, as also by the Thirty-sixth Regiment, and that he was engaged with the Fourth at Barba del Puerco, it is evident that his loss must have been very great. Independent of the killed and wounded, I saw 490 prisoners, who were taken on that occasion. About this period, Massena himself set out for France, and his army retired towards Salamanca. Junot, Loison, and others of the general officers, also quitted the army of Portugal, as it was called, and the command devolved upon Marshal Marmont.

In consequence of letters from Marshal Beresford, Lord Wellington quitted the army of the North on the 15th of May, and proceeded to Elvas.



A.D. 1811.

The weather having continued fine for some time, the waters of the Guadiana subsided; and on the 3d of May, Marshal Sir William Carr Beresford was able to invest Badajos closely, on both sides of that river. On the 8th, a sortie was made from the garrison upon the Seventeenth Portuguese Regiment, the grenadiers of which particularly distinguished themselves by charging the enemy, with Colonel Turner at their head. On the 10th, another sortie was made from Fort St Christoval, in which we suffered some loss. The enemy, however, though 1200 strong, was immediately repulsed, and the Seventeenth Regiment again distinguished itself, as did also the First Battalion of the Loyal Lusitanian Legion.

Soult, perceiving that Badajos was in danger of falling, collected together from all quarters as many troops as he possibly could, and left Seville on the 10th of May, with a corps estimated at 15,000 or 16,000 men, with the avowed intention of raising the siege of that place; and on descending into Estremadura, he was joined by 5000 more under General Latour Maubourg. On the 12th, Marshal Beresford suspended his operations before Badajos, and, removing the heavy guns and stores to Elvas, he proceeded with the army under his command to oppose Soult's advance.

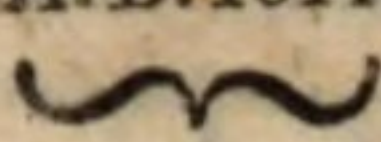
On the 15th, he took up a position on the



banks of a small stream near the village of Al-<sup>A. D. 1811.</sup> buera, and in the course of that night was joined by the corps of General Blake, and a brigade under Don Carlos de Espagne. On the morning of the 16th, every disposition was made for receiving the enemy, who had appeared on his front the day before. The allied forces were formed in two lines on a ridge, which had a gradual ascent from the small river in their front, and so as to cover the road to Badajos and Villa Verde. The Spanish troops were on the right, the British in the centre, and the Portuguese on the left.

Soult commenced his attack about nine o'clock on the morning of the 16th, upon the right of the line, at the same time threatening the left with two heavy columns of infantry. Bearing, however, with his whole force upon the Spaniards on the right, they, with Lieutenant-colonel Colborne's brigade, were driven from their position, which for a moment was taken possession of by the enemy. Colonel Colborne's brigade, perceiving that the enemy's columns could not be broken by their fire, rushed on to the charge, with Major-general the Honourable William Stewart at their head, and drove them from the height which they had gained, in a most gallant style. In this charge they were unfortunately outflanked by a corps of Polish lancers (cavalry), and suffered se-



A.D. 1811.  verely. Major-general Houghton's brigade, and Major-general Cole's division, were moved up to the support of the Spaniards, and of Colonel Colborne's brigade. The gallant Houghton was killed in leading on his men to a desperate charge, which, however, together with a well-directed fire and charge from the fusileer brigade, obliged the enemy to abandon his situation, and retire precipitately, under cover of his reserve. Major-general Baron Alten, with the light infantry brigade of the King's German Legion, defended the village and bridge of Albuera in a very gallant manner; and the enemy, being completely repulsed on every point, retired from the contest about two o'clock in the afternoon.

This was a bloody but a glorious day for the allied armies, and, as Marshal Beresford observes, "Never did troops maintain more valiantly, or more gloriously, the honour of their respective countries." The Portuguese division of Major-general Hamilton evinced the utmost steadiness and courage, and manœuvred equally well with the British. Brigadier-general Harvey's brigade, (the Eleventh and Twenty-third Portuguese), had an opportunity of distinguishing itself when marching in line across the plain, by gallantly repulsing a charge made upon it by the enemy's



cavalry. The brigade commanded by Colonel <sup>A. D. 1811.</sup> Collins also behaved nobly.

Soult retired, after the battle, to the ground which he had previously occupied; and on the night of the 17th, commenced his retreat towards Seville. He was closely pursued by our cavalry, and suffered considerably. In this action, Soult brought into the field about 21,000 infantry and 4000 cavalry. Marshal Beresford had about 6000 British infantry, and 1200 cavalry; 12,000 Portuguese infantry, and 1000 cavalry; and General Blake had under his command about 9000 men. Marshal Beresford lost, in killed and wounded, about 4500. Marshal Soult lost upwards of 9000.

On the 18th of May, General Hamilton's division of Portuguese infantry, and Brigadier-general Maddan's brigade of cavalry, returned to the investment of Badajos; and on the 19th, Lord Wellington reached Elvas. On the 25th, our cavalry, under Major-general Lumley, came up with Soult's army at Usagre, and, after a very gallant affair with the cavalry, which formed the rear-guard of that army, obliged them to retire with a loss of twenty-nine killed, and seventy prisoners.

On quitting Villa Formosa, Lord Wellington directed the third and seventh divisions to follow



A. D. 1811. him to the Alentejo, and the remainder of the army, under Sir Brent Spencer, to watch the motions of Marmont. The troops arrived before Badajos about the 29th, and the operations of the siege, under the immediate direction of the Commander-in-chief, commenced with great activity. On the 2d of June, we began to fire upon the fort of St Christoval, from four batteries on the right of the Guadiana, as also upon the enemy's batteries on the castle, which had been constructed to support that fort. Two batteries were also opened on the left of the Guadiana, and their fire directed against the eastern face of the castle.

Lord Wellington had proved the courage of the Portuguese troops in almost every way in the field, but they had never as yet been tried in any thing like an assault upon a fortified place. The fire from the fort of St Christoval being likely to occasion the loss of a number of lives during the operations which it was necessary to carry on against Badajos on the left of the Guadiana, it became necessary to attempt to take it by storm; a favourable opportunity was thus offered of trying the courage of the Portuguese troops. The breach having been reported practicable, on the 6th a party of British and Portuguese, under Major M'Intosh of the Eighty-fifth, was directed



to make an attempt upon it that night. The men <sup>A. D. 1811.</sup> advanced under a heavy fire of musketry and hand-grenades from the out-works, and of shot and shells from the town, with the utmost intrepidity, to the bottom of the breach ; but the enemy having cleared away the rubbish from the bottom of the escarp, their ladders were too short ; and after suffering severely, they were obliged to retire without being able to mount it. Our fire being continued upon the place during the 7th and 8th, the breach again appeared practicable. On the night of the 9th, another party was formed, chiefly from the Seventh, Seventeenth, and Nineteenth Portuguese Regiments, and the command given to Major M'Geachy of the Seventeenth, whose fall I have already mentioned. These brave fellows again reached the bottom of the breach, and Captain Budd and about thirty of the grenadiers of the Nineteenth Regiment actually mounted, and for a short time gained possession of it. As in the former case, the ladders were by far too short, for the enemy had cleared away every thing from the escarp. Captain Budd was wounded, and taken prisoner with his brave companions ; and Major-general Houston, seeing those heroes suffer so much, gave orders that they should retire, which they did in good order, but



A. D. 1811. with the loss of their brave leader, and several other officers.

No troops could behave with greater heroism than the Portuguese, in both these attacks; and the service of the batteries on the right bank of the Guadiana, which was conducted by detachments from the First, Second, and Third Regiments of Portuguese Artillery, was carried on with great success. Major-general Hamilton, and the division under his orders, are also particularly mentioned.

During these operations, Soult, who had retired to Seville after the action of the 16th of May, was busied in collecting, in the Estremadura, the whole French force in the centre and south of Spain. Druet's corps was brought from Toledo; Marmont was moved down from Castile; and several battalions drawn off from the blockade of Cadiz. Lord Wellington, therefore, turned the siege of Badajos into a blockade, and took post with the greater part of his army at Albuera, on the 13th of June. On the same day, the enemy's advanced guard, consisting of about 10,000, arrived at Los Santos. On the 17th, Lord Wellington quitted Albuera, crossed the Guadiana, (raising the blockade of Badajos), and took up a strong position between Elvas, Campo Maior, and Aronches.



As Marmont moved off towards Estremadura, A. D. 1811. Sir Brent Spencer also altered his position, and kept in a parallel direction with the French columns; and when the enemy crossed the Tagus at Almaraz, Sir Brent crossed with his army at Villa Velha, and joined Lord Wellington upon the Cayes, near Aronches. On the 22d, the enemy reconnoitred the position of the allied army with a large body of cavalry. This force, however, was attacked near Campo Maior, by Major-general De Grey's brigade of British, and Brigadier-general Maddan's brigade of Portuguese cavalry, and repulsed, without his being able to see that position. It had been arranged by Lord Wellington, that, as Soult advanced with this immense force upon the allied army, Blake, with his corps, should endeavour to get round his flanks, and proceed towards Seville and Madrid, from which places almost every description of troops had been drawn off; and so well did Lord Wellington occupy Soult's attention by his manœuvres, that I believe Blake was at Castellejos before the Marshal was aware of his being in his rear. Had Blake moved on, as had been arranged, it might have been of great moment; but as Soult immediately detached a force in pursuit of him, the Spaniards began to think more



A.D. 1811 of their own safety, than of the arrangements agreed upon.

As Marshal Soult found that Lord Wellington was too well prepared for him, he immediately drew off his troops from the neighbourhood of Badajos, and retired towards the centre of Spain, taking with him the greater part of the heavy ordnance from the garrison.

Lord Wellington kept his army in the field till the 18th of July, when the enemy having retired to some distance from the frontier, the troops were allowed to go into cantonments upon the banks of the Tagus for a few weeks; but, as Marmont again moved towards the Douro, it became necessary for Lord Wellington also to move in that direction, and to canton the troops in the Lower Beira, instead of letting them remain in the province of Alentejo, which at that season of the year was most unhealthy. The head-quarters were moved from the Quinta de St João, in the neighbourhood of Elvas, to Castello Branco, on the 1st of August; and although the army under Marmont remained in the neighbourhood of Placência for nearly a month, the allied army continued to move to the left. The head-quarters were fixed at the town of Fuentes de Guinaldo, while the army approached Cidade Rodrigo, and took up a position on the Agueda.



This movement of Lord Wellington appears to <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> have been closely watched by the General who commanded the French army in the north, as, on the 16th and 17th of August, a considerable corps arrived at Valladolid, and, on the 1st September, a division reached Salamanca. Marmont's army was concentrated, and began to move towards Castile, but nothing of any moment occurred till the 21st of September, when the enemy, having united his forces, advanced from Salamanca with a convoy of provisions for the garrison of Cidade Rodrigo. On the 22d the Commander-in-chief collected the allied army, and took up a position from which he could either advance or retire, but which would oblige the enemy to shew his force, before it was necessary to do either. On the 23d the enemy appeared on the plain near Cidade Rodrigo, but soon retired. On the 24th he advanced in considerable force, entering the plain by the roads of St Spirito and Tenebron, and before night the whole of his cavalry, amounting to 6000 men, and four divisions of infantry, were united in the neighbourhood of that city, while the remainder of his army was encamped at Guadapero, immediately behind the mountains which surround the plain. On the morning of the 25th a detachment of eleven squadrons of the Imperial Guard drove in our out-posts on the Lower



A. D. 1811. Azava ; but, on crossing that river, the Lancers of Berg were attacked by two squadrons of the Sixteenth, and a squadron of the Fourteenth Light Dragoons, and driven back across the river ; and on attempting to rally, they were fired upon by the light company of the Sixty-first Regiment, which Lieutenant-general Sir Thomas Graham had placed upon his flank. Major-general Anson, with his brigade, drove them for a considerable way on the other side of the Azava, and was able to take up his former position on the right of that river.

During these operations, Marmont moved a strong column of thirty or forty squadrons of cavalry, and fourteen battalions of infantry, from Cidade Rodrigo. This column, which was accompanied by twelve pieces of cannon, advanced in such a direction, that for some time it was doubtful whether it would attempt to gain the heights by Encina and El-Boden, or take the direct road for Fuentes de Guinaldo. Lord Wellington, however, soon became certain of their intention, and the second battalion of the Fifth Regiment, which was posted on the heights over which the road passes to Guinaldo, was reinforced by the Seventy-seventh Regiment and Twenty-first Portuguese infantry, and three squadrons of General Alten's brigade of cavalry, while the



troops were brought from El-Boden, and the <sup>A.D. 1811.</sup> fourth division from Fuentes de Guinaldo, for the purpose of supporting that post.

Before these troops could arrive, a regiment of the enemy's cavalry pushed on and took possession of two pieces of cannon on the right of the army; but being charged by the Fifth Regiment, it was repulsed, and the two guns retaken. Another of the enemy's regiments attacked the Seventy-seventh in front, but was also repulsed; and the German Light Dragoons, by frequent and vigorous charges, prevented their gaining the heights on the left of the two British regiments.

As the enemy's column of infantry advanced rapidly, and there was a probability of its reaching the post occupied by the Fifth and Seventy-seventh, before the troops from El-Boden or Guinaldo could come to their support, Lord Wellington determined to withdraw them from that position. The Fifth and Seventy-seventh were formed into a square, and the Twenty-first Portuguese into another, and supported by the small body of General Alten's cavalry, and the Portuguese artillery, they retired in the face of the whole of the enemy's cavalry, which, notwithstanding all their efforts, were never able to make any impression upon the two squares; and, though three sides



A. D. 1811. of the square were attacked at the same moment, the enemy was repulsed with great vigour and bravery. In retiring, these squares were joined by the remainder of the third division, formed also in squares, which had been withdrawn from El-Boden, and the whole retired upon Fuentes de Guinaldo in the greatest order, as the enemy contented himself with keeping up a cannonade, and did not attempt any further attacks.

On the evening of the 25th, the Commander of the forces collected the third and fourth divisions of infantry at Guinaldo, and also the Portuguese brigade under General Pack, and the British cavalry under Generals Alten, de Grey, and Slade. General Crawford was directed to retire from the Agueda with the light division; and the seventh division, under General Houston, was formed in Albergaria. Sir Thomas Graham, with the troops under his command, was ordered to take post at Nave d'Aver, while he kept his advanced guard on the Azava. The allied army was thus formed in *echelon*, with its right on the pass of Perales, its centre in Fuentes de Guinaldo, and its left at Nave d'Aver. The Spanish Generals Don Carlos d'Hispanha and Don Julian Sanchez, were in the rear of the enemy with their Guerillas. In the course of the night another column of infantry was brought from Cidade Rodrigo, and on the



26th the whole of the enemy's force was united <sup>A. D. 1811.</sup> in front of our position at Fuentes de Guinaldo. Lord Wellington did not choose to fight in that position, and as soon as it was dark he retired about three leagues. The enemy pursued with his cavalry, but was frequently repulsed. During the night of the 27th Lord Wellington retired, and took up a position upon the Coa, about a league in the rear of that which he had left. The enemy now ceased to advance, and began to collect his advanced posts at Albergaria.

In his dispatch to the Earl of Liverpool, Lord Wellington is pleased to say, That the gallant conduct of the Twenty-first Portuguese infantry, under Colonel Baçellar, was very conspicuous; and although it never was actually charged, it was often threatened, and it shewed the utmost firmness and discipline, not only in the manner in which it prepared to receive the enemy, but also in all its movements during a retreat of six leagues over a plain, and in the face of a superior force of cavalry and artillery. The Portuguese artillerymen, belonging to the guns which the enemy obtained possession of for a moment, were cut down in defending them. The enemy retired into Spain on the 29th, and on the 30th the army of the north proceeded to Salamanca and Valladolid, and that of Portugal, under Marmont, to



A.D. 1811. Banhos and Placência, and the allied army once more went into cantonments.

On the 15th of October, General Reynault, the governor of Cidade Rodrigo, was taken by Don Julian Sanchez's Guerillas; and on the 22d General Hill advanced from Portalegre, with the division under his orders, for the purpose of compelling General Girard to retire from Caçeres, as in that position he threatened to annoy the troops under the Count of Penne Villamur and General Morillo. On the 23d the head of the column reached Albuquerque, where the General learnt that Girard had retired from Aliseda to Arroyo del Puerco, and that the Spaniards were again in possession of Aliseda. On the 24th, a brigade of British infantry, half a brigade of Portuguese artillery, (six-pounders), and some cavalry, reached that place, while the remainder of the cavalry, a brigade of British infantry, and half a brigade of Portuguese artillery, (six-pounders), were at Casa de Cantiliana, about a league distant. On the 25th the Count de Villamur made a reconnoissance with his cavalry, and drove the enemy from Arroyo del Puerco. The enemy retired upon Malpartida, which he held as an advanced post, while the main body of his army was at Caçeres. On the 26th the troops under General Hill arrived at Malpartida, and found that it was abandoned



also, and that the enemy was retiring upon Caçeres. <sup>A.D. 1811.</sup>  
He was pursued by a small party of the Second German Hussars, which had some skirmishing with his rear-guard.

While General Hill was at Malpartida, he received information that the enemy had quitted Caçeres with his main body; and as the weather was bad, and he was uncertain as to the direction which he had taken, the General halted his troops for that night. On the 27th, he advanced by the road leading to Merida by Casa del Cano and Casa de Don Antonio, as he had received certain information that the enemy had retired upon "Torre Mocha;" but during this day's march, he received information, that the enemy had left Torre Mocha that morning, and was halted with his main body at Arroyo del Molino, while his rear-guard was at Albala.

General Hill, finding that the enemy were in total ignorance of his motions, made a forced march to Alcuesca, which was within a league of Arroyo del Molino, and there made the necessary dispositions for surprising or bringing him to action, before he should march in the morning. No fires were allowed to be made when the troops halted, and they rested upon their arms till about two o'clock in the morning of the 28th, when they left their bivouack, and proceeded in one



A.D. 1811. column, (the right in front), direct upon Arroyo del Molino. They moved in this order till within half a mile of the town, when they were separated into three columns. Major-general Howard's brigade, with three six-pounders, under Lieutenant-colonel Stewart, supported by Brigadier-general Morillo's Spanish infantry, formed the left; Colonel Wilson's brigade, the Portuguese infantry under Colonel Ashworth, two six-pounders and a howitzer under General Howard, the right; and the cavalry the centre.

The left column marched direct upon the town. The right broke off so as to turn the enemy's left, while the cavalry, under Sir William Erskine, moved between the two columns of infantry, ready to act in front, or move round either of them, as occasion might require. The enemy, who was filing out of the town by the Merida road, did not perceive the advance of our columns until they were very near; and the Seventy-first and Ninety-second Regiments, charging into the town, which was still occupied by the rear of the enemy's column, and the whole of his baggage, drove them every where at the point of the bayonet.

By the time these two regiments got to the end of the town, the enemy's infantry was formed in two squares, with the cavalry on his left, and he



had taken a position between the Merida and Me-<sup>A. D. 1811.</sup>  
dillin roads, fronting Alcuesca. The Seventy-first  
Regiment immediately lined the garden-walls,  
which were within half-musket shot of the ene-  
my's right square, while the Ninety-second filed  
out, and formed in line on the right of the Seventy-  
first, and perpendicular to the enemy's right flank.  
One wing of the Fiftieth Regiment occupied the  
town, and secured the prisoners, while the other  
wing of that regiment, with the three six-pound-  
ers, skirted the outsides of it.

While the enemy was thus engaged on his right,  
General Howard was moving round his left, and  
our cavalry advancing, cut off his cavalry from  
his infantry, and put the former to the rout, and  
the Thirteenth Light Dragoons took possession  
of the enemy's artillery. He began now to re-  
treat in great confusion; but General Howard's  
column having gained its point, and the left co-  
lumn at the same time pressing hard upon him,  
he had no resource but to surrender, or disperse  
and ascend the mountains. He preferred the  
latter, and ascending near the eastern extremity,  
which was almost inaccessible, he was followed  
by the Twenty-eighth and Thirty-fourth Regi-  
ments, while the Thirty-ninth, and Colonel Ash-  
worth's Portuguese brigade, proceeded round the



A.D. 1811. mountain by the Truxillo road, so as to take him  
in flank.

Girard escaped with about 200 of his troops, leaving in the possession of the allies one General of cavalry, one Colonel, three Lieutenant-colonels, one of his Aides-de-camp, nearly forty Captains and inferior officers, and between 1300 and 1400 men, besides the whole of his artillery, baggage, commissariat, and other stores, and the contribution of money which he had levied at Caçeres. The loss of the allies was very trifling, and after this glorious atchievement, they returned to their former cantonments in the neighbourhood of Portalegre.

Early in the season, a battering train of fifty pieces of heavy ordnance had been landed at Oporto, and was conveyed by water to Lamego. From this place it was transported by land to Almeida, and not less than 4000 bullocks were employed in this service for several months. Yet the whole of the train and ordnance stores did not arrive at Almeida till about the beginning of January; the troops, therefore, remained quietly in their cantonments in the Upper Beira till that period, with the exception of the light division, which was in the front, observing the enemy's movements, and the army of the South, which made occasional excursions into Spain, and



kept the corps of Druet and Dombroirke upon <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> the alert. 

On the 8th of January 1812, every thing being in readiness for the siege, Lord Wellington invested Cidade Rodrigo; but before the place could be approached, it was necessary to take or destroy a palisadoed redoubt, which had been erected on the hill of St Francisco, as also three fortified convents connected with that work. This operation was entrusted to Major-general Crawford, who, as soon as it was dark, sent Colonel Colborne of the Fifty-second, with a detachment of the light division, to take the fort. The attack was ably conducted by Colonel Colborne; our brave fellows stormed it in a gallant style, making two Captains and forty-seven men prisoners. Captain Mein, of the Fifty-second, who led the storming party, was severely wounded, but our loss was trifling.

In consequence of this success, the army broke ground that night within 600 yards of the city, notwithstanding that the enemy held the fortified convents. On the 14th, our fire was opened from twenty-two pieces of ordnance, which formed three batteries in the first parallel; and that same night the approach was opened with the second parallel, and the besiegers established in it, and within 150 yards of the walls of the place.



A. D. 1812. This operation was rendered secure on the right by General Sir Thomas Graham, having surprised the enemy's detachment in the convent of Santa Cruz on the 19th, and General Colville attacked and got possession of the convent of St Francisco on the 14th, which secured the left.

The 15th, 16th, and 17th, were spent in completing the second parallel, and the approaches to it, and in erecting a battery in the neighbourhood of the convent of St Francisco, which opened on the 18th. On the 19th, the breaches in the Fausse Braye wall, and in the body of the place, effected by the batteries in the first parallel, were considered practicable, as also a breach in the suburbs of St Francisco, which had been made by the battery opened on the 18th; and as Marmont appeared to be advancing with a powerful force from Salamanca, for the purpose of raising the siege, Lord Wellington determined to take the city by storm.

The third and light divisions were fixed upon for this important business, as they happened to be the troops on duty that day\*. They were formed into five columns. The two right, conducted by Lieutenant-colonel O'Toole, of the

---

\* The army took the duties of the trenches by divisions during the siege.



Second Portuguese Caçadores, and Major Ridge, <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> of the Fifth Regiment, were destined to protect the advance of the third column, which was composed of General M'Kinnon's brigade, to the top of the breach in the Fausse Braye wall. The fourth column, which was composed of the Forty-third and Fifty-second Regiments, and part of the Ninety-fifth Regiment, and directed by General Crawford, was destined to attack the breaches on the left in the suburbs of St Francisco, and to cover the left of the attack at the principal breach, by the troops of the third division under General Picton; and General Pack's Portuguese brigade, which formed the fifth column, was directed to make a false attack upon the south face of the fort.

Besides these columns, the Ninety-fourth Regiment, under the command of Lieutenant-colonel Campbell, descended into the ditch on the right of General M'Kinnon's brigade, for the purpose of protecting that column against the obstacles which it was supposed the enemy would construct, to oppose its progress to the principal breach in the Fausse Braye wall.

Major Ridge, with his column, escalated the Fausse Braye wall, and stormed the principal breach in the main body of the place, along with the Ninety-fourth Regiment, which had moved



A. D. 1812. along the ditch, and had stormed the breach in the Fausse Braye wall in front of General M'Kinnon's brigade, so that it not only covered the advance of that brigade, but even preceded it in the attack. Generals Crawford and Vandeleur, with the troops on the left, were equally forward in their movements; and in less than half an hour from the commencement of the attack, the city was in our possession. General Pack converted his false attack into a real one. The brave Portuguese troops scaled the wall in every direction, and the advanced guard, under Major Lynch, followed the enemy's troops from the advanced works into the Fausse Braye, where they made prisoners all who opposed them.

Major-general M'Kinnon was blown up by the explosion of one of the enemy's mines near the breach, General Crawford was mortally wounded in leading on his division, and Major Napier, of the Fifty-second, who led the advance, lost an arm; so that this important city was not gained without a severe loss. Nothing could exceed the uniform good conduct of the troops, and their patience and perseverance during this siege; and the impetuosity with which they attacked the breaches on the night of the storm, bore down every opposition.

The First Portuguese Infantry, under Colonel



Hill, and Sixteenth under Colonel Campbell, and <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> Third Caçadores under Lieutenant-colonel Elder, were particularly distinguished during the storm, and are mentioned in the highest terms of praise by Lord Wellington. And the rapid execution produced by the well-directed fire from our batteries, attests sufficiently the merits of the officers and men of the Royal Artillery, and of the Portuguese Artillery, employed on that occasion.

The whole of the ordnance and heavy train belonging to the French army were found in Cidade Rodrigo, and great quantities of provisions and stores of every description; and the Governor, and what remained of the garrison, became prisoners of war. In this assault, British humanity was as conspicuous as British valour; for, notwithstanding that the lives of all were forfeited, very few of the garrison were killed after we got possession of the place.

Marshal Marmont collected his forces at Salamanca, but finding he was too late, he retired to his former position. Lord Wellington employed the fifth division for some time in repairing the walls and works of Cidade Rodrigo, while the rest of the army began to file off to the south; and the greater part of the month of February was spent in collecting the troops in the Alentejo. About the middle of March, Badajos was invest-



A.D. 1812. ed. On the 31st, we began to fire upon the face of the bastion, to the south-west of the angle of the Fort Trinidad, and upon the flank of the bastion Santa Maria, with twenty-six pieces of artillery formed in two batteries, in the second parallel.

On the 29th of March, previous to the opening of the breaching batteries, the enemy made a sortie upon the Portuguese troops under General Hamilton, who invested the place on the right of the Guadiana; but they were immediately repulsed with some loss. The fire from our batteries was constant and most tremendous, and for a great part of the 1st, 2d, 3d, and 4th of April, not less than sixty-four shot were thrown per minute. On the morning of the 4th, a third battery of six pieces was opened upon the ravelin of St Roque; and on the evening of the 5th, the breaches were considered practicable. But, as the enemy appeared to be making most formidable preparations to repel any assault, Lord Wellington determined to wait until the third breach was also practicable. This was effected on the afternoon of the 6th, and his Lordship determined to storm the place that evening.

The third division, under General Picton, was directed to attack the castle by escalade, while the guards in the trenches, which were furnished that day by the fourth division, should attack the



ravelin of St Roque on the left of the castle. A. D. 1812.   
The fourth division, under Major-general Colville, and the light division, under Colonel Barnard, were ordered to attack the breaches in the bastions of Trinidad and Santa Maria. Major-general Walker, with his brigade, was to make a false attack upon the fort of Pardeleras, and other works on the banks of the Guadiana; and General Power, with the Portuguese troops under his command, had orders to attack the tete-du-pont and fort of St Christoval on the right of that river.

The attack commenced exactly at ten o'clock at night. The breaches were attacked in the most gallant manner by the fourth and light divisions, who got almost to the covered way before they were perceived by the enemy. But Philippon had brought the bravest of his troops to that point, and every obstacle that the shortness of the time would admit of was opposed to their advance; and notwithstanding the most determined and almost desperate efforts which were made by our brave fellows to overcome those obstacles, they were three times repulsed, and unable to effect an entry by the breaches. Many a noble fellow fell a sacrifice to his bravery, and success had almost become hopeless, when the Command-



A. D. 1812. er of the forces was informed that General Picton  
was in possession of the castle.

The cheering information soon spread through the ranks, and our troops returned to the charge with an impetuosity that nothing could oppose, and in ten minutes more they were in possession of the place. General Walker succeeded in his attack upon the Pardeleras, which was taken possession of by the Fifteenth Portuguese Infantry, under Colonel De Regoa, and the Eighth Caçadores, under Major Hill. General Walker also forced the barrier on the Olivença road, and, entering the covered way on the left of the bastion of St Vincent, he descended into the ditch, and scaled the face of that bastion. Philippon fled with a few troops to the fort of St Christoval; but, at the break of day, he surrendered, together with General Veilande and the garrison of that fort.

It was a bloody but glorious night for the allied army, and the intrepidity and bravery of the Portuguese was most conspicuous throughout the whole of the siege, and principally in the assault; and the Eighth Caçadores, under Major Hill, are particularly distinguished by the Commander of the forces.

Marshal Soult, when he heard of the investment of Badajos, collected the whole of the



troops in the south of Spain, in the same manner A. D. 1812 as last year, and left Seville on the 1st of April. He was joined by the troops under Druet on the 3d, and on the 4th he reached Llerena.

Sir Thomas Graham and General Hill, who were in the advance with the troops not engaged in the siege, were directed to fall back gradually as Soult advanced. This they did; but Soult never came farther than Villa Franca, as he judged it proper to retire to his former position in Andalusia, as soon as he heard of the fall of Badajos. Our cavalry, however, attacked the rear of Soult's army at Villa Garcia, on the morning of the 11th of April, and took one Lieutenant-colonel, two Captains, one Lieutenant, three Sergeants, ten Corporals, 111 privates, and 123 horses.

On this occasion Marshal Beresford, in transmitting to the Secretary at War, Don Miguel Pereira Forjaz, the return of the killed and wounded of the army under his command, was pleased to observe, "That the conduct of the Portuguese troops did honour to the nation; and whether he considered their zeal during the siege, or their valour in the assault, he had equal reason to feel proud of commanding them. The artillery (continues the Marshal, in the letter which I am attempting to translate) was well conducted during the siege; and in the



A. D. 1812. assault the Eleventh, Fifteenth, and Twenty-third Regiments of the Line, and the First, Third, and Eighth Caçadores, were those who, by their positions, had the greatest opportunity of distinguishing themselves. I congratulate (adds his Excellency) the Governors of Portugal on this happy event, so important to that kingdom, and to the common cause; and I participate with the nation in the glorious part which the Portuguese troops have acted, and in the satisfaction and feelings which this additional proof of their being worthy to contend in the same ranks with the best soldiers in the world, must ever induce."

Marmont did not join Soult, as on the former occasion; and, with a view of diverting Lord Wellington's attention from the siege, he invested Cidade Rodrigo and Almeida, and even pushed his advanced guard to Castello Branco. But, as the capture of Badajos was so quickly accomplished, he had not time to do much mischief, and as soon as the place was in our possession, the army of the north proceeded to its former position.

As Lord Wellington advanced upon Almeida, Marmont retreated, and crossed the Agueda with his whole force on the 23d; and though he succeeded in burning some villages and towns, he suffered considerably from the militia under General Baçellar, as the brigades of Generals Trant

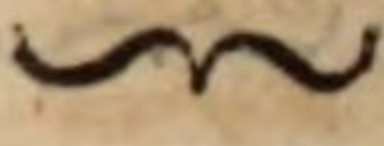


and Wilson were continually hanging upon his <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> flanks and rear. And, as Lord Wellington observes in his dispatch to Lord Liverpool, “a partial success over the Portuguese Militia on their retreat from Guarda, and the murder and plunder of the inhabitants of a few villages in the Lower Beira, were the only fruits of Marshal Marmont’s expedition into Portugal.”

Lord Wellington established his head-quarters once more at Fuentes de Guinaldo, while the enemy continued to retreat from the frontier.

About the beginning of May, Sir Rowland Hill was directed to destroy the enemy’s posts and establishments at the passage of the Tagus at Almaraz; but, owing to the necessary preparations, he was not able to set out on this expedition before the 12th. On that day he marched from Almendralijo, on the 16th the troops reached Jaraicejo, and on the morning of the 19th the First Battalion of the Fiftieth, and one wing of the Seventy-first Regiment, stormed and took the Fort Napoleon, which contained nine pieces of cannon, and a garrison of between four and five hundred men. This garrison they drove, at the point of the bayonet, through the several entrenchments of the fort, and across the bridge; and the impression which the assault made upon the enemy was such, that he abandoned Fort



A.D. 1812.  Ragusa, on the other side of the river, and fled in great confusion towards Naval Moral; so that both these forts, and the apparatus of the bridge, were completely destroyed, together with the work-shops, magazines, and every piece of timber that could be found.

On the 13th of June the British army crossed the Agueda, and marched forward in three columns, and on the 16th it arrived on the Valmusa, a small rivulet about six miles from Salamanca, which, after some shew of resistance, the enemy evacuated that evening, leaving a garrison of about 800 men in the forts which had been erected upon the ruins of some colleges and convents which they had demolished. On the 17th the army crossed the Tormes by two fords in the neighbourhood of Salamanca, and the forts were invested by the sixth division, which, after a siege of nine days, were taken by storm on the evening of the 27th of June. Marshal Marmont had collected his army on the Douro on the 16th and 17th, from which he made a forward movement on the 20th, for the purpose of communicating with the forts in Salamanca; but being attacked in his position on our right flank on the 22d, he retired, and established himself with his right on the heights near Cabessa Villosa, and his



left on the Tormes at Huerta, and his centre at <sup>A.D. 1812.</sup>  
Aldea Rubia.

On the 24th the enemy crossed the Tormes at Huerta, and was followed in this movement by the first and seventh divisions, under Sir Thomas Graham, and General Le Merchant's brigade of cavalry, which obliged him to re-cross the river, and take up his former position.

As soon as Marmont heard of the fall of his forts in Salamanca, he withdrew his advanced guard from Alba de Tormes, and retired with his army in three columns towards the river Douro. The allied army advanced on the 28th from its position in front of Salamanca, and encamped at Guarena on the 30th.

The enemy remained quietly in his strong position, on the north of the Douro, till the 15th and 16th of July, when he began to concentrate his army between Toro and St Roman, on the right of that position. On the evening of the 16th a considerable body of troops passed the Douro at Toro, which obliged Lord Wellington to move the allied army to the left, with an intention of concentrating it on the Guarena. As Marmont was in possession of all the bridges over the Douro, and of many of the fords, Lord Wellington could not prevent his crossing at any point he pleased; and, during the night of the 16th, the



A.D. 1812. troops that had crossed at Toro were recalled, and the whole French army moved to Tordisellas, where it crossed on the morning of the 17th, and by a rapid march of ten leagues in the course of that day, was assembled at La Nava del Rey.

The fourth and light divisions of infantry, and General Anson's brigade of cavalry, had marched to Castrejon on the night of the 16th, in consequence of the arrangements which Lord Wellington had made for the assembling of the army on the Guarena; and as there was not time to recall these troops, after intelligence was received of the enemy being at Nava del Rey, they were attacked by the dawn of day on the 18th. Lieutenant-general Sir Stapleton Cotton, who commanded this advanced post of the allied army, maintained his position until the cavalry brigades of Generals Le Merchant, Alten, and Bock, joined him. But the left flank of his position being turned, the troops retired to Tordisellas de la Orden, and from thence to the Guarena, which they crossed in the face of the enemy's whole force, and effected their junction with the army in good order.

The Guarena river is formed by four small streams, which unite below Canizal; and as the enemy appeared to be taking up a strong position on the heights on the right of that river, Lord



Wellington placed the fourth, fifth, and light divisions on the opposite heights, and directed the remainder of the army to cross the river at Vallesa, as Marmont appeared desirous of turning his right at that point. Shortly after his arrival, however, the enemy crossed at Cartillo, and pressing upon the left of the allied army, endeavoured to enter the valley of Canizal. General Alten's brigade of cavalry, supported by the Third Dragoons, charged the enemy's cavalry at that point, and took General Carrier and a number of prisoners; and being reinforced by General William Anson's brigade of British, and General Harvey's brigade of Portuguese infantry, the enemy's infantry, which was supporting his cavalry, were also defeated, and driven back at the point of the bayonet.

In this affair Lieutenant-general Cole, Major-general Alten, Major-general William Anson, Lieutenant-colonel Arentchild of the First Hussars, Lieutenant-colonels Harvey of the Fourteenth Dragoons, M'Lean of the Twenty-seventh Foot, and Anderson of the Eleventh Portuguese infantry, and Majors Archdall of the Fortieth Foot, and Azevedo of the Twenty-third Portuguese infantry, distinguished themselves.

On the 19th the enemy withdrew all their troops from the right, and marched by Tarragona,



A.D. 1812. apparently with an intention of turning our right. Lord Wellington crossed the Guarena at Vallesa and El-Olmo, in the course of that night, expecting to be able to bring Marmont to action on the plain of Vallesa on the 20th. But shortly after day-light, it was discovered that several columns were moving to the left along the heights of the Guarena, which river he crossed below Canta la Piedra, and encamped at Biblafuente and Villamela. The allied army made a corresponding movement to its right by Cantalpino, and encamped at Cabessa Villosa, having the sixth division and General Alten's cavalry on the Tormes, at Aldea Lingua.

On the 21st Lord Wellington concentrated his army on the Tormes, and the enemy also moved towards that river, which he crossed in the course of the afternoon, at the fords between Huerta and Alba de Tormes, and advanced on the road leading to Cidade Rodrigo.

The allied army crossed in the evening by the bridge of Salamanca and fords in that neighbourhood, and took up a position with its right upon one of the two heights called Dos Arapiles, and its left on the Tormes, below the ford of Santa Martha. The third division, and General D'Urban's Portuguese cavalry, were left at Cabririzos, on the right of the Tormes, as Lord Wellington



conceived it probable, that when Marmont found A. D. 1812.  
the allies prepared to meet him, he might alter  
his plans, and manœuvre by the other bank, as he  
still kept a force on the heights above Biblafuente.

In the course of the night of the 21st, the enemy got possession of the village of Calvarasa d'Ariba, and of the height near it called Nuestra Señora de la Pena, and shortly after daylight on the 22d, he succeeded in gaining the more distant of the heights, Dos Arapiles, in consequence of having his troops concealed in the woods nearer that height than any part of the allied army.

In the course of the morning, the light troops of the seventh division and Fourth Battalion of Caçadores engaged the enemy on the height of Nuestra Señora de la Pena, and maintained themselves on that height throughout the whole of the day. As the enemy, however, was in the possession of the more distant of the Arapiles, and had it in his power to annoy the position of the allies, Lord Wellington extended his right in *potence* to the heights beyond the village of Arapiles, and occupied that village with his light infantry. The fourth division was placed upon these heights, and as it was evident the movements of the enemy would be confined to the left of the Tormes, the third division was recalled



A. D. 1812. from the right of that river, and placed behind Aldea Tejada. General Bradford's brigade of Portuguese infantry, and the Guerillas of Don Carlos d'Espagne, were moved to the neighbourhood of Las Torres between the third and fourth division.

After a variety of evolutions and movements, the enemy fixed upon his plans about two o'clock in the afternoon, and under cover of a heavy cannonade he extended his left, and moved forward his troops for the purpose of embracing our position on the two Arapiles which we possessed, and from which he might be able to break our line, or render difficult any movement to our right. This extension of his line, and its advance upon our right, gave Lord Wellington an opportunity of attacking him with advantage; and notwithstanding his troops occupied very strong ground, and their position was well defended by cannon, his Lordship did not lose that opportunity.

The right of the British position was reinforced with the fifth division under Lieutenant-general Leith, which was placed behind the village of Arapiles on the right of the fourth division, and also with the sixth and seventh divisions, which were placed in the reserve. As soon as these troops had got to their stations, Major-general Pakenham was ordered to move forward with the third division and General D'Urban's cavalry,



and two squadrons of the Fourteenth Dragoons A. D. 1812.  
under Lieutenant-colonel Harvey, in four columns, to turn the enemy's left, while the cavalry, the fourth and fifth divisions, and General Bradford's Portuguese brigade, supported by the sixth and seventh divisions, attacked him in front. General Pack's brigade and Don Carlos D'Espagne's troops supported the left of the fourth division, and attacked the height of Arapiles, which the enemy had possession of; the first and light divisions occupied the ground on the left, and were in reserve. Major-general Pakenham formed the third division across the enemy's flank, and being supported in a most gallant style by the Portuguese cavalry under General D'Urban, and Colonel Harvey's squadrons of the Fourteenth, he overcame every thing opposed to him, and defeated the enemy in every attempt which they made upon his flanks.

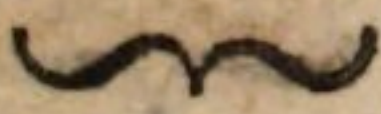
The fourth and fifth divisions, with the cavalry, attacked so briskly in front, that they drove the enemy from one height to another in the greatest confusion; and by bringing forward their right, they gained strength upon his flank in proportion as they advanced. Brigadier-general Pack made a gallant attack upon the Arapile occupied by the enemy, and succeeded in drawing their attention from General Cole, who was advancing



A. D. 1812. with the fourth division to dislodge them from that position. The crest of the height was carried by the fourth division; but General Cole being wounded, and the enemy having brought forward a strong column, and gained some advantage over General Pack, it was obliged to give way; but being relieved by the sixth division, and Marshal Beresford having brought General Sprye's Portuguese brigade to bear upon the enemy's flank, the position was carried.

In the mean time, the enemy's right having been reinforced by the troops which had fled from his left, and by those which had retired from the Arapiles, continued to make some resistance. But the first and light divisions, with General William Anson's and Colonel Stubbs' brigades of the fourth division, which had been re-formed, having been ordered to turn their right, while the third, fifth, and sixth divisions attacked in front, the whole gave way, and fled through the woods towards the Tormes. The first and light divisions, and General Anson's brigade of the fourth division, with some squadrons of cavalry, pursued them as long as any body of them could be found together; but the darkness of the night was highly favourable to the retreat of the enemy, as Lord Wellington was obliged to halt his troops till day-light appeared.



on the morning of the 23d, when the pursuit A. D. 1812. recommenced. 

Our cavalry, under Generals Anson and Bock, came up with the rear-guard near La Serna, which they immediately charged. The French dragoons scampered off, and left the infantry to their fate, so that the whole of that body, consisting of three battalions, was made prisoners by the heavy brigade of the King's German Legion, under General Bock. The pursuit was continued as far as Peneranda on the 23d, and renewed with the dawn on the 24th.

This was the most decisive victory that had ever been gained in the peninsula. The enemy continued to retreat upon Valladolid, but he left in possession of the allies about twenty pieces of artillery, and ten thousand prisoners; two of the Imperial Eagles, and six stand of colours, besides several ammunition-waggons, and a great part of his baggage. "I have," says Lord Wellington, in his letter to Earl Bathurst, "great pleasure in reporting, that throughout the whole of this trying day, (22d July), of which I have related the events, I had every reason to be satisfied with the conduct of the general officers and troops. The relation which I have written of its events, will give a general idea of the share which each individual had in them; and I cannot say too much



A.D. 1812. in praise of the conduct of every individual in  
his station."

Brigadier-generals D'Urban, Pack, Sprye, Power, and Bradford, and Colonels Stubbs, Douglas, and the Count de Rezende, &c. of the Portuguese service, with the troops under their command, are particularly mentioned by the Commander of the forces, as also Lieutenant-colonel the Count de Ficalho, of the Eighth Portuguese Infantry.

Such a victory could not be gained without a severe loss on the part of the allies, and the Portuguese lost not less than 304 killed, 1552 wounded, and 182 missing; the British loss was 388 killed, 2714 wounded, and 74 missing; and the Spanish 2 killed, and 4 wounded.

On the 28th Lord Wellington was at Olmeda, within thirty-two miles of Valladolid; and on the 30th the army crossed the Douro, and marched upon that city, which had been abandoned by the enemy on the 29th; and seventeen pieces of cannon, a large quantity of ammunition and stores, and about eight hundred sick and wounded, were found in that city. Lord Wellington was received by the inhabitants of Valladolid with the same enthusiastic joy that had welcomed him in every other part of the nation. The advanced guard and left of the allied army continued to pursue the flying rem-



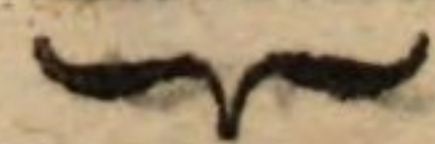
nants of Marmont's force, while the right moved A. D. 1812.  
along the Cega river to Cuellar, where it arrived  
on the 1st of August, for the purpose of prevent-  
ing a junction between these dispersed columns  
and the army of the centre.

Joseph Bonaparte quitted Madrid on the 21st of July, with a considerable force, for the purpose of joining Marmont; and, advancing rapidly, he reached Blascho Sancho, between Avila and Arivala, on the 25th. At this place he received intelligence of Marmont's defeat, which obliged him to retreat with even more rapidity than he had advanced. On the 1st of August he left Segovia, and marched through the Guadarrama, closely pursued by General D'Urban's cavalry.

Lord Wellington remained at Cuellar till the morning of the 6th, when, finding that Marmont's army continued to retreat upon Burgos, he moved forward in the direction of Madrid.

During this busy period, the army of the south had remained in a great measure inactive in Spanish Estremadura, yet the advanced posts had frequent skirmishes with the enemy in that quarter, and as frequently distinguished themselves. On the 24th July, the cavalry under Sir William Erskine attacked three regiments at Ribeira, and killed and wounded thirty men and a great many



 A.D. 1812. horses, and took eleven men and thirty horses prisoners.

On the 7th of August Lord Wellington reached Segovia, and on the 8th St Ildefonso, where he halted for a day, to allow the right of the army to come up. On the 9th General D'Urban's cavalry, and First Light Battalion of the King's German Legion, with Captain M'Donald's troop of horse artillery, passed through the Guadarrama mountains without opposition. On the 11th General D'Urban moved forward from Galapagas, and supported by the Heavy Cavalry of the King's German Legion, who had joined from Torrelodonas, he drove in about 2000 of the French cavalry, and placed himself at Majalahenda with Captain M'Donald's troop, while the cavalry and light infantry of the German Legion were at Los Royas, about three quarters of a mile distant. In the course of the afternoon the enemy's cavalry, which had retired towards Naval Carneiro, returned upon Majalahenda; and General D'Urban, having drawn up his brigade in front of the village, ordered them to charge the enemy's leading squadrons, which appeared too far advanced to be supported by his main body. The Portuguese cavalry advanced to the charge, but unfortunately turned about before they reached the enemy, and fled through the village, leaving Cap-



tain M'Donald's guns totally unprotected. But, <sup>A. D. 1812.</sup> by the activity of Captain M'Donald and his men, only three of them fell into the enemy's hands, and these only in consequence of being overturned, and their carriages broken. The Portuguese Dragoons were rallied and re-formed upon the German cavalry, which were formed between the village of Majalahenda and Los Royas. The Germans charged the enemy's column, and stopped its further progress; and Colonel Ponsonby's brigade of cavalry, and a brigade of infantry from the seventh division, having been moved up to their support, the enemy retired upon Alcorçon, and left the three guns which they had taken at Majalahenda.

The Portuguese cavalry, on this occasion, appear to have been panic-struck, yet Lord Wellington bears testimony to the bravery of their officers; and, what is somewhat singular, they lost more men and officers than the Germans, who actually charged the enemy. On the 12th of August the left of the army moved forward, and took possession of the capital of Spain, which Joseph Bonaparte had left on the preceding evening, taking the roads of Toledo and Aranjuez. A strong garrison was left in the Retiro, but it was deemed of little moment, and the joy of the inhabitants exceeded all bounds when the allied



A. D. 1812. army entered Madrid. The Retiro was invested on the 13th, and on the 14th the garrison surrendered by capitulation, and was marched out prisoners of war : 189 pieces of brass ordnance were found in that place, besides 20,000 stand of arms, 900 barrels of powder, and considerable quantities of clothing, provisions, and ammunition. The Eagles of the Thirteenth and Fifty-first French Regiments were forwarded to England.

On the 10th of August, General Maitland, with an army from Sicily, landed at Alicant. On the night of the 24th the siege of Cadiz was raised, and on the 27th Seville was taken possession of by the British and Spanish forces.

While Lord Wellington remained at Madrid, the remains of Marmont's army recovered somewhat from their panic, and ventured to advance in the direction of Valladolid. His Lordship therefore returned to the north, and drove them beyond the Ebro. For the last month the British army has been employed in besieging the Castle of Burgos,—where line after line has been taken at the point of the bayonet, but, as yet, the news of the surrender of that place have not reached this distant part of the kingdom.



---

---

## APPENDIX.

---

---







## APPENDIX.

### NOTES TO CHAP. I.

**NOTE 1.**—For a number of years past, the sea has been encroaching upon the neck of land which runs between the Atlantic and the river Sado, opposite the town of St Ubes, and the ruins of a city of considerable extent are very visible. These ruins are now called TROIA, and are said to be the remains of the ancient city of CETOBRIGA, which was destroyed by an earthquake about seventy years before Christ. Fable says, that this was the city which Tubal founded; that it was named Set-Tubal, “the gathering of Tubal;” and that, when it was destroyed, the surviving inhabitants fled to the opposite side of the river, and founded the present town. It is evident, that whatever may have been the origin of this city, it has been buried under the earth for many centuries, as the sand has accumulated in many places some hundred feet above the tops of the houses; and in general, it is about thirty feet under the surface. At low water, regular and extensive streets can be traced, and many of the houses are of a large size. When I visited these ruins in 1810, I picked up two or three brass coins evidently Roman, but in too mutilated a state to distinguish accurately the reign in which they had been struck. Several vessels of silver and gold have been found, and some of them are in the possession of the governor of St Ubes, Don Rodrigo de Lancastre. I recommend the ruins of TROIA as well deserving of a visit from the Antiquarian.



NOTE 2.—CADIZ was founded by Hercules, it is said, and was long the principal colony of the Phœnicians. Lisbon was evidently founded by the same people, although the origin of that city is more involved in obscurity than almost any other in the Peninsula.

NOTE 3.—The Lusitanians complained that the barren mountains which they were compelled to inhabit, were incapable of furnishing them with the necessaries of life. GALBA, therefore, to entice them from these mountains, promised to settle them in the fertile plains of Andalusia; and it was while on their journey to that country, which had been assigned to them, that the Prætor caused them to be way-laid by his army, and basely murdered.

NOTE 4.—In many places, the remains of the temples and statues dedicated to Augustus are still to be seen, particularly at Braga, Evora, and Viseu.

## NOTES TO CHAP. II.

NOTE 1.—When Affonso Henry was on his way from Coimbra on this expedition, he made a vow, if victorious, to dedicate a temple to God, and to consecrate for that purpose, his part of the spoils, and all the land where he then had encamped.—This was the origin of the convent of Alcobaça, which rose to be one of the richest in Europe. But this noble edifice was reduced to ashes by the French army in 1811, in obedience to an order from Marshal Massena.

NOTE 2.—The original constitution of Portugal is as follows.

“Prima Congregatio Regis Alfonsi, Henrici Comitis filii, in qua agitur de Regni negotiis, et multis aliis rebus magni ponderis et momenti.



“ In nomine Sanctæ et individue Trinitatis, Patris, et Filii, et Spiritûs Sancti ; Trinitas inseparabilis, quæ nunquam separari potest. Ego Alfonsus Comitis Henrici, et Reginae Tharasiæ filius, magni quoque Alfonsi Imperatoris Hispaniarum nepos, ac pietate divina ad Regium solium nuper sublimatus. Quoniam nos concessit Deus quietari, et dedit victoriam de Mauris nostris inimicis, et propterea habemus aliquantam respirationem, ne forte nos tempus non habeamus postea, convocavimus omnes istos, Archiepiscopum Bracarensem, Episcopum Visen. Episcopum Portuens. Episcopum Colimbriensem, Episcopum Lamesces ; viros etiam nostræ curiæ infra positos, et procuratores bonam prolem per suas civitates, per Colimbriam, per Vimaranes, per Lamecum, per Viseum, per Barcellos, per Portum, per Trancosum, per Chaves, per Castrum Regis, per Bouzelas, per Parietes vetulas, per Senam, per Covilham, per Montem Maiorem, per Isgueiram, per Villam Regis, et per parte Domini Regis Laurentius Vanegas, et multitudo ibi erat de Monachis, et de Clericis, et congregati sumus Lamecum in Ecclesiâ Sanctæ Mariæ de Almacave. Seditque Rex in solio Regni, sine insigniis regiis, et surrexit Laurentius Vanegas procurator Regis, et dixit : Congregavit vos Rex Alfonsus quem vos fecistis in campo Auriquio, ut videatis literas Domini Papæ, et dicatis si vultis, quod sit ille Rex. Dixerunt omnes, Nos volumus quod sit Rex. Et dixit procurator : quomodo erit Rex, ipse, aut filii ejus, aut ipse solus ? Et dixerunt omnes : Ipse in quantum vivet, et filii ejus posteaquam non vixerit. Et dixit procurator : Si ita vultis, date illi insigne. Et dixerunt omnes : Demus in Dei nomine. Et surrexit Archiepiscopus Bracarensis, et tulit de manibus Abbatis de Laurbanio coronam auream magnam cum multis margaritis, quæ fuerat de Regibus Gothorum, et dederant Monasterio, et posuerunt illam Regi. Et Dominus Rex, cum spata nuda in manu suâ, cum quâ ivit in bello, dixit : Benedictus Deus, qui me adjuvavit, cum ista spata liberavi vos, et vici inimicos nostros, et vos me fecistis Regem, et socium vestrum. Siquidem me fecistis, constituamus leges per quas terra nostra sit in pace. Dixerunt omnes ; Volumus, Domine



Rex, et placet nobis constituere leges, quas vobis bene visum fuerit, et nos sumus omnes cum filiis, et filiabus, et neptibus, et nepotibus ad vestrum mandare. Vocavit citius Dominus Rex Episcopos, viros nobiles, et procuratores, et dixerunt inter se, Faciamus in principio leges de hæreditate Regni, et fecerunt istas sequentes.

“ Vivat Dominus Rex Alfonsus, et habeat Regnum. Si habuerit filios varones vivant, et habeant Regnum, ita ut non sit necessitas facere illos de novo Reges. Ibunt de isto modo. Pater si habuerit mortuus, filius habeat, postea nepos, postea filius nepotis, et postea filios filiorum in secula seculorum per semper. Si fuerit mortuus primus filius vivente patre, secundus erit Rex, si secundus tertius, si tertius quartus, et deinde omnes per istum modum. Si mortuus fuerit Rex sine filiis, si habeat fratrem, sit Rex in vita ejus, et cum fuerit mortuus, non erit Rex filius ejus, si non fecerint eum Episcopi, et procuratores, et nobiles Curiae Regis, si fecerint eum Regem erit Rex, si non fecerint non erit Rex. Dixit postea Laurentius Vanegas procurator Domini Regis ad procuratores: Dicit Rex: si vultis quod intrent filias ejus in hæreditatibus regnandi, et si vultis facere leges de illis? Et posteaquam altercaverunt per multas horas dixerunt: Etiam filiae Domini Regis sunt de lumbis ejus, et volumus eas intrare in Regno, et quod fiant leges super istud. Et Episcopi, et nobiles fecerunt leges de isto modo. Si Rex Portugalie non habuerit masculum, et habuerit filiam, ista erit Regina, posteaquam Rex fuerit mortuus de isto modo. Non accipiet virum nisi de Portugal, nobilis, et talis non vocabitur Rex, nisi postquam habuerit de Regina filium varonem, et quando fuerit in Congregatione maritus Reginae ibit in manu manca, et maritus non ponet in capite coronam Regni. Sit ista lex in sempiternum, quod prima filia Regis accipiat maritum de Portugale, ut non veniat Regnum ad extraneos, et si casaverit cum Principe extraneo, non erit Regina, quia nunquam volumus Regnum nostrum ire for de Portugalensibus, qui nos sua fortitudine Reges fecerunt sine auxilio alieno, per suam fortitudinem, et cum sanguine suo. Istæ sunt leges de hæreditate Regni nostri, et legit eas



Albertus Cancellarius Domini Regis ad omnes, et dixerunt, bonæ sunt, justæ sunt, volumus eas per nos, et per semen nostrum post nos.

“ Et dixit procurator Domini Regis: Dixit Dominus Rex, Vultis facere leges de nobilitate et justitia? Et responderunt omnes, Placet nobis, sit ita in Dei nomine: et fecerunt istas.— Omnes de semine Regis, et de generationibus filiorum, et nepotum, sint nobilissimi viri. Qui non sunt de Mauris, et de infidelibus Judæis, sed Portugalenses, qui liberaverint personam Regis, aut ejus pendonem, aut ejus filium, aut generum, in bello, sint nobiles. Si aliquis comprehensus de infidelibus mortuus erit, propter quod non vult esse infidelis, sed stat per legem Christi, filii ejus sint nobiles. Qui in bello mataverit Regem inimicum, vel ejus filium, et gancaverit ejus pendonem, sit nobilis. Omnes qui sunt de nostra curia, et fuerunt de antiquo nobiles, sint per semper nobiles. Omnes illi qui fuerunt in lide magna de Campo Dauriquio sint tanquam nobiles, et nominentur mei vassalli per totas suas generationes. Nobiles si fugerint de lide, si percusserint cum spata, aut lancea mulierem, si non liberaverint Regem, aut filium ejus, aut pendonem pro suo posse in lide, si juraverint falsum testimonium, si non dixerint veritatem Regibus, si malè falaverint de Regina, et filiabus ejus, si fuerint ad Mauros, si furtaverint de alienis, si blasphemaverint ad Jesum Christum, si voluerint matare Regem, non sint nobiles, neque illi, neque filii eorum per semper. Istæ sunt leges de nobilitate. Et legi eas Cancellarius Regis Albertus, et dixerunt: Bonæ sunt, justæ sunt, volumus eas per nos, et per semen nostrum post nos.

“ Omnes de Regno Portugalie obediant Regi, et Alvazilibus Locorum, qui fuerint ibi per nomine Regum, et isti judicabunt per istas leges justitiæ. Homo si furtaverit per prima vice, et secunda, ponant eum medium vestitum in loco ubi omnes vadunt; si magis furtaverit, ponant in testa latronis signum cum ferro caldo; si magis furtaverit moriatur, et non matabunt eum sine jussu Domini Regis. Mulier si fecerit malfario viro suo cum homine altero, et vir ejus accusaverit eam ad Alvazil, et si sunt boni testes, cremetur cum igne, cum dixerunt totum ad Domi-



num Regem, et cremetur vir de malfario cum illa. Si maritus non vult quod cremetur mulier de malfario, non cremetur vir qui fecit malfario, sed vadat liber, quia non est lex vivere illam, et matare illum. Si aliquis occiderit hominem, sit quis est, moriatur pro illo. Siquis sforsiaverit virginem nobilem, moriatur, et totum suum avere sit de virgine sforsiata. Si non est nobilis, maritentur ambo, sive homo nobilis sit, sive non sit. Quando aliquis per vim gancaverit avere alienum, vadat quærelusus ad Alvazil, et ponat quærelam, et Alvazil restituet illi suum avere. Homo qui fecerit roxum cum ferro moludo, vel sine illo, vel dederit cum lapide, vel ligno troncudo, faciat illum Alvazil componere damnum, et pechare decem morabitanos. Homo qui fecerit injuriam Alvazile, Alcaide, homini misso a Domino Rege, vel etiam saione, si percusserit assignetur cum ferro caldo, si non peche 50 morabitanos, et componet damnum. Hæc sunt leges justitiæ, et legit eas Cancellarius Regis Albertus ad omnes, et dixerunt: Bonæ sunt, justæ sunt, volumus eas per nos, et per semen nostrum post nos.

“ Et dixit procurator Regis Laurentius Vanegas: Vultis quod Dominus Rex vadat ad Cortes Regis de Leone, vel det tributum illi, aut alicui personæ for Domini Papæ, qui illum Regem creavit? Et omnes surrexerunt, et spatibus nudis in altum dixerunt: Nos liberi sumus, Rex noster liber est, manus nostræ nos liberaverunt, et Dominus Rex qui talia consenserat moriatur, et si Rex fuerit non regnet super nos. Et Dominus Rex cum corona iterum surrexit, et similiter cum spata nuda dixit ad omnes: Vos scitis quantas lides fecerim per vestram libertatem; testes estis, testis brachium meum, et ista spata, siquis talia consenserit, moriatur; et si filius, aut nepos meus fuerit, non regnet. Et dixerunt omnes: Bonum verbum. Morientur, et Rex si fuerit talis quod consentiat Dominium alienum, non regnet. Et iterum Rex: Ita fiat.

“ Jam me, et omnia Beato Petro, et ejus successoribus vectigalem constitui, cupiens et nunc Beatam Dei genitricem apud Deum Advocatam habere, de consensu vassalorum meorum, qui absque externo adjutorio me in Regium solium constitue-



runt, me ipsum, Regnum meum, gentem meam, et successores meos sub Beatae Mariæ C. tutelam, protectionem, defensionem, et patrocinium constituo.

“ *In Lamecensi Ecclesia, 4. Calend. Maii, A. D. 1143.*”

I have preferred giving this document, which is signed by Alfonso and seven of the Nobles and Bishops, in the original Latin, though it is somewhat barbarous, as any translation would certainly have lessened its value.

NOTE 3.—When Alfonso first met his council, he began to entertain them with a long account of his field sports, which so irritated one of his nobles, that rising up, he boldly told the King, that they had met there to consult on the affairs of the nation, not to listen to what could only amuse fools: That he could assure his Majesty, that if he continued to occupy his time as he had hitherto done, the nation would—What? angrily interrupted the King.—Elect a more worthy Prince for their King, calmly answered the nobleman.

The King left the council in great wrath; but, upon reflection, he was pleased to alter his conduct, and to thank the nobleman for his sincerity and candour.

NOTE 4.—*Speech of Nuno to the assembled Generals.*

“ The council summon’d, some with prudent mein,  
And words of grave advice their terrors screen.  
By sloth debas’d, no more the ancient fire  
Of patriot loyalty can now inspire;  
And each pale lip seem’d opening to declare  
For tame submission, and to shun the war;  
When glorious Nunio, starting from his seat,  
Claim’d every eye, and closed the cold debate:  
Singling his brothers from the dastard train,  
His rowling looks, that flash’d with stern disdain,  
On them he fixt, then snatch’d his hilt in ire,  
While his bold speech bewray’d the soldier’s fire,



Bold and unpolish'd ; while his burning eyes  
Seem'd as he dared the ocean, earth, and skies.

Heavens ! shall the Lusian nobles tamely yield !  
Oh shame ! and yield untry'd the martial field !  
That land whose genius, as the God of war,  
Was own'd where'er approach'd her thundering car ;  
Shall now her sons their faith, their love deny,  
And, while their country sinks, ignobly fly !  
Ye timorous herd ! are you the genuine line  
Of those illustrious shades, whose rage divine,  
Beneath great Henry's standards awed the foe,  
For whom you tremble and would stoop so low !  
That foe, who, boastful now, then basely fled,  
When your undaunted sires the hero led,  
When seven bold Earls in chains the spoil adorn'd,  
And proud Casteel through all her kindreds mourn'd,  
Casteel, your awful dread—yet, conscious, say,  
When Diniz reign'd, when his bold son bore sway,  
By whom were trodden down the bravest bands  
That ever march'd from proud Castilia's lands ?  
'Twas your brave sires—and has one languid reign  
Fix'd in your tainted souls so deep a stain,  
That now degenerate from your noble sires,  
The last dim spark of Lusian flame expires ?  
Though weak Fernando reign'd, in war unskill'd,  
A godlike king now calls you to the field.  
Oh ! could like his your mounting valour glow,  
Vain were the threatenings of the vaunting foe.  
Not proud Casteel, oft by your sires o'erthrown,  
But every land your dauntless rage should own.  
Still if your hands, benumb'd by female fear,  
Shun the bold war, hark ! on my sword I swear,  
Myself alone the dreadful war shall wage,  
Mine be the fight—and trembling with the rage



Of valorous fire, his hand half-drawn display'd  
 The awful terror of his shining blade——  
 I and my vassals dare the dreadful shock ;  
 My shoulders never to a foreign yoke  
 Shall bend ; and by my Sovereign's wrath I vow,  
 And by that loyal faith renounc'd by you,  
 My native land unconquer'd shall remain,  
 And all my Monarch's foes shall heap the plain."

*Vid. Meikle's Lusiad, p. 150.*

NOTE 5.—John I. of Portugal was the mediator between England, France, and Spain, and effected a peace between these nations at this period.

NOTE 6.—When John III. enlarged the University of Coimbra, he employed Andrew de Govea, a celebrated Portuguese, to engage the first classical scholars of the age that were to be found at Paris. Among these George Buchanan and his brother Peter were induced, by the liberal offers of Govea, to proceed to Coimbra. George taught the first Greek class for some time, and his brother the fourth. But the Inquisition soon became more powerful than the King, and all foreign teachers were banished from that school.

NOTE 7.—The ruined state of both kingdoms made peace very desirable ; it was therefore a most popular act of the new Regent, and tended to confirm his power, which many were inclined in the first instance to dispute.

#### NOTES TO CHAP. VII.

NOTE 1.—The Kings of Portugal, (convinced of the impolicy of the measure), were long averse to the introduction of the Court of Inquisition into that kingdom, and they resisted the importunities of the Heads of the Church and Kings of



Spain for more than a century and a half; at last, however, stratagem effected what could not be obtained by fair means, and a bold adventurer had the address to constitute himself a *Cardinal*, and to fix the holy office in Portugal. This took place in the reign of John III. and its dominion has continued uninterrupted since that period.

NOTE 2.—For many years after the battle of Alcaçer, where the young King Sebastian fell, it was believed in Portugal, that he had escaped and was alive. The appearance of several impostors tended to confirm this belief, as well as to keep the attention of the people, who were groaning under the tyranny of the Philips, fixed upon his return; and the anxious wishes which every one had for that return, laid the foundation of a sect who are called SEBASTIANISTS, and who even at this moment believe that Don Sebastian is to return. The way and manner of his return have been revealed to those believers, and they have no hesitation in saying, that he is to arrive during a fog, and will be seen galloping upon the waves of the sea on a white horse, &c. &c.

NOTE 3.—Portugal has produced many celebrated poets both in ancient and modern times. Among the most esteemed Epic poems, may be reckoned,

1. A Poem entitled, *Henriqueida*; or, the foundation of the Portuguese Monarchy,—author not stated.

2. A Poem entitled *Affonso Libius*; or, *Conquests in Africa*, author not stated.

3. *As Lusiadas*; or *Discovery of India*, by the celebrated Camoens.

4. *Ulyssea*, or *Lisbon Edificada*, by P. de Castro.

5. *Malacca Conquistada*, by Menezes.

6. *The Siege of Diu, and Shipwreck of Sepulveda*, who boast of royal authors.

7. *Nuno Alves Pereira, Constable of the Kingdom*, a poem, by F. R. Lopez.

In Lyric Poetry, the poems of Bernardez, Sa, and Miranda,



and of Ferreira, are the most celebrated; and in the Drama, the Comedies of Gil Vicente, the Shakespeare of Portugal, and the Tragedy of Innes de Castro, by Ferreira, are certainly the best. These authors may be considered as ancient, as their works were published before the crown of Portugal was seized by the Kings of Spain. From that unfortunate period to the reign of Joseph I. little attention was paid either to literature or the muses; yet, even in that age of superstition and intrigue, a MACEDO is distinguished by the elegance of his Latin composition; and an excellent poem was published in Spanish, entitled Demophoonte and Phille. The most celebrated modern poet are, Garçon, Denis, Francisco Manuel, and Boccage, while those of less importance are very numerous.

There have been some very excellent historians in Portugal, and Barros and Castro are names well known in Europe. Indeed, *if there was a well-regulated liberty of the press* in Portugal, that nation would not long remain in the back-ground, for as I have already observed, there is no want of talent in that country, and the people in general are fond of literary pursuits.



GENERAL STAFF  
OF THE  
PORTUGUESE ARMY.

---

LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR WILLIAM CARR BERESFORD, K. B.  
Marshal and Commander-in-Chief.

*Aides-de-Camp to Ditto.*—Lieut.-col. Warre, Marquis of Angeja,  
Don Jose L. de Souza, Count of Alva, Major the Count of  
Lumiares, Captain Sewel, Captain Molloy.

Lieutenant-general JOHN HAMILTON, Inspector-general of In-  
fantry and Caçadores.

*Aid-de-Camp to Ditto.*—Captain Watson.

Marechal de Campo THE COUNT DE SAMPAYO, Inspector-gene-  
ral of Cavalry.

*Aides-de-Camp to Ditto.*—Colonel Cayola, Captain Sampayo,  
Captain Manuel Jose de Moraes, Lieutenant Don Manuel de  
Noronha, Cornet Antonio Lacerda.

Marechal de Campo JOSE ANTONIO DA ROSA, Commandant-  
general of Artillery.

*Aid-de-Camp to Ditto.*—Captain J. A. da Costa.

Marechal de Campo MATTIAS JOSE DIAS AZEDA, Commandant-  
general of the Royal Engineers.

*Aides-de-Camp to Ditto.*—Captain Azedo, Second Lieutenant  
Mosquito.



Military Secretary, Marechal de Campo Lemos.  
 British Ditto, Colonel Robert Arbuthnot.  
 Assistant Ditto, Captain James Robinson.  
 Adjutant General, Brigadier-general Mozinho.  
 Deputy Adjutant-general, Colonel Silveira.  
 Assistant Adjutant-generals, Major Serrão, Major Sepulveda,  
 Captain Savedra, Captain Valdez, Captain da Costa.  
 Quartermaster-general, Brigadier-general D' Urban.  
 Deputy Quartermaster-generals, Colonel Silveira Pinto, Colo-  
 nel H. Hardinge, Colonel Hervey.  
 Assistant Quartermaster-generals, Major Cordeiro, Captain Cha-  
 puzet, Captain the Viscount da Lappa, Captain Pinheiro,  
 Captain Fusquini, Lieutenant Flangini, Lieutenant Gorjaõ.  
 Ditto Supernumerary, Ensign Cordeiro.  
 The Deligado of the Physician-general, Dr Barreto.  
 Inspector-general of Military Hospitals, William Fergusson, Esq.  
 Surgeon-general, M. A. C. Barreto.  
 Chaplain-general, Senhor Santos e Paz.

*British Staff Surgeons serving with the Portuguese Army as  
Assistant or Field Inspectors of Hospitals.*

Augustus West, John Callander, Edward Keating, Frederick  
 Jebb, George Morse, John Clarke, William Wynn, C. John  
 Laisne, William Robson, E. F. Coates, D. M' Lagan, Patrick  
 Hughes, A. Kendall, William Maiben, Joseph Taylor, John  
 Barr, Alex. Schetky, Philip Walter.



*Generals commanding Provinces, with their respective Staff Officers.*

**ESTREMADURA**—Head-quarters Lisbon.

Governor and Commander-in-Chief, His Excellency Lieutenant-General DON ANTONIO SOARES E NORONHA.

*Aides de Camp.*—Colonel the Marquis of Tancos, Major Gon. Jose d'Araujo, Major Man. B. de Chaby, Lieutenant-Colonel Count of Louzão, Major Domingos d'Albuquerque, Captain Marquis of Laurical, Captain L. Vasconcelles e Souza.

*Secretary,* Bento Xavier de Velasco.

**ALENTEJO**—Head-quarters Elvas.

Governor, His Excellency Lieutenant-general LEITE.

*Aides-de-Camp.*—Lieutenant-colonel Caneva, Captain Leite de Souza, Captain Cardozo Moniz, Ensign Pimentel.

*Secretary,* Antonio Pereira da Silva.

**BEIRA**—Head-quarters Lamego.

Governor and Commander-in-Chief, His Excellency Lieutenant-General MANUEL PINTO BAÇELLAR, Viscount of Montealegre.

*Aides-de-Camp.*—Major Azeveda, Major Viera, Captain Lemos, Captain Pinto Guedes, Captain Povoas e Brito, Major Abreu e Lima.

*Secretary,* Antonio de Fonseca.

**TRAS-OS-MONTES**—Head-quarters Braganza.

Governor, His Excellency Lieutenant-general SILVEIRA, Count of Amarante.

*Aides-de-Camp.*—Major Pimentel, Captain Correa, Captain Magalães, Ensign Pinto.

*Secretary,* D. J. Pimentel.



## District of OPORTO—Head-quarters Oporto.

Governor, Brigadier-general SIR NICOLAS TRANT, Knt.

*Aid-de-Camp*, Captain Linstow.—*Secretary*, J. A. Gourlay.

## MINHO—Head-quarters Vianna.

Governor, Brigadier-general SIR JOHN WILSON, Knt.

*Aides-de-Camp*.—Lieutenant-colonel Da Silva, Captain Castro,

Lieutenant Quartin, Captain Da Cunha, Captain Murphy.

## ALGARVE—Head-quarters Taviro.

Commandant, Colonel JOHN AUSTIN.

*Aides-de-Camp*.—Lieutenant-colonel Andrade, Major Lopez,

Ensign Guedes.

*Secretary*, Jose B. Ayres Alva.*Recruiting Service.*

General Depôt for Infantry and Caçadores at MAFRA.

Major-general BLUNT, Inspector-general of Recruits.

Lieutenant-colonel WATLING, Sub-inspector.

Ensign Joaquim das Neves, *Aid-de-Camp*.—Disembargador Monteiro, Auditor.—Father Paixão, Chaplain.—Lieutenant Lobo, Secretary.

General Depôt for Cavalry at SALVATERRA.

Colonel JOHN BROWN, Commandant.

Major Carey, Major —Captain Hawkins, Lieutenants Leach and Nowlan, Instructors.

F I N I S.



## ERRATA.

Page 8. Line 13. *for Veriatus read Viriatus.*

25. 20. *for Nascia read Nasica.*

— 96. — 4. *for Arada read Aranda.*

— 122. — 27. *for Equiré read Equité.*

— 126. — 19. *for Junót read Loison.*

— 221. — 12. *for Lieutenant 48th read Captain 48th.*

In the Table of Population, *for 1811. read 1801.*

— — — — —, *for 1810. read 1800.*

Page 392. line 19. *for “ this long course is only necessary,” &c. read “ this long course is necessary for all who form in medicine, and another year is requisite for those who take a Doctor’s degree, which, besides being very expensive, obliges the candidate to submit to a private examination, and to keep several public acts.”*











072







Halliday, Andrew

The present state of Portugal, and of the Portuguese Army with an epitome of the ancient history of that Kingdom ; a sketch of the campaigns of the Marquis of Wellington for the last four years ...

Edinburgh 1812

Port. 25 q

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10779913-4